



08

三嶋与夢

イラスト/孟達

GC NOVELS

THE WORLD OF OTOME GAMES IS TOUGH FOR MOBS

– Otome Game Sekai wa Mob ni Kibishii Sekai Desu –

- VOLUME 8 -

- AUTHOR-

Mishima Yomu

Wai

- ILLUSTRATOR-

Monda

[Dobelyu Wai]

GC NOVELS

三嶋与夢
イラスト／孟達



乙女ゲー世界は
THE WORLD OF OTOME GAMES IS A TOUGH FOR MOBS. ★08
モブに崩しい世界です

『あのーー私からもお伝えしたい

ことがあるんです』

ガチャリと音を立ててテーブルに置かれたのは、鎖が付いた首輪だった。

ニックスは一瞬だけ、昨日の首輪を自分が置き忘れたのかと思って——そこでドロテアが首輪を持つているのがおかしいことに気付いた。

そして二つの首輪の内、一つをドロテアが自分の首に装着する。

ニックス

ドロテア

「捕まえたぞ、お兄様。

遊んでくれないと暴れるにや～」

「待つっていましたワン、お兄ちゃん





乙女ゲー世界は
モバ恋しい世界です
THE WORLD OF OTOME GAMES IS A TOUCH FOR MOBS. ★08

プロlogue 007

第01話 「お見合い」 025

第02話 「顔合わせ」 051

第03話 「予想外」 075

第04話 「首輪」 107

第05話 「外道騎士の兄」 131

第06話 「結婚」 153

第07話 「ローズブレイド伯爵」 178

第08話 「苗木ちゃんの真実」 204

第09話 「末っ子コリン」 221

第10話 「妹」 252

第11話 「鎖よりも強い絆」 267

エピilogue 290

番外編1 「ドロテア奥様」 310

番外編2 「夢オチ」 339

PROLOGUE

Human beings are creatures of regret.

If we had acted differently at that time and place, no matter how many times we thought about it, the result would not change, but we would still be thinking about it.

In the end, the best we can do is to avoid repeating our mistakes.

However, it seems that it is also difficult for me, an ordinary person [Leon Fou Bartfalt], not to repeat the same mistakes.

“I can’t believe this is happening”

[You got what you deserved]

Today, my partner, [Luxion], threw some words of encouragement at me when I was depressed.

This guy is usually cold to me.

We’re in the port of the Kingdom of Horfalt.

Airships are arriving and departing on a floating island in the sky near the royal capital.

Since morning, airships have been coming in and out of the city, and many people have been coming and going.

It was filled with noise, with the sound of whistles and people shouting.

Why am I coming to the harbor?

That’s because I’m about to be repatriated halfway home to my parents.

“Leon, you’re working too hard. I understand that you’re busy with your career, but if you don’t take a break when you can, you’ll collapse one day.”

"I think you're being too worried"

"The fact that you yourself don't know it is even more of a problem."

The owner of the shining blonde hair [Angelica Rafa Redgrave] gives me a reproachful, yet concerned look.

Her long hair was braided into a bun and she was dressed in a red dress.

From the chest to the waist area, the body is made in such a way that you can see the lines of her body, and her large breasts and tight waist can be clearly seen even through her clothes.

After spring break, Ange and I will both be seniors.

Compared to when I first started school, I've grown taller and better built.

Ange looks like she has developed a more mature charm.

Behind Ange, the maids of the Redgrave house with the travel bags were standing by.

One of them is [Cordelia Fou Easton] who took care of me in the Republic of Arzel.

The older, intelligent woman with glasses was giving me a cold look today. I'm sure she's accusing me inwardly, saying, "You're causing trouble for Ojou-sama".

Because Cordelia-san hates me.

I guess she feels some kind of way about me getting another marriage partner in the Republic, even though I have Ange, her precious master's daughter.

I can't say anything back about that, so I'll just accept Cordelia-san's attitude.

She becomes friendliness might be difficult, but it doesn't bother me because she basically gets the job done.

I suppose Cordelia-san is an adult in that respect.

And there was a girl, her flaxen hair swaying in the wind, looking sadly at me.

No, she's not a girl anymore, she's a woman.

[Olivia], who is beginning to have a strong heart despite her gentle atmosphere, is worried about my well being.

"Leon-san needs a vacation. I understand that you have a lot of things to do, but for now, please go back to your parents' house and rest your body."

My two fiancées told me to leave the royal capital and return to the countryside where my parents live.

Or would it be more accurate to say that I'm being brought back?

"There's really nothing to worry about."

I press my face with my right hand, wondering why they're so worried about me --- I remember the reason.

That had happened a few days ago.

"Roland bastard, I'll never forgive him! Luxion, find out his weakness. I don't care what it is. I'll find a weakness that I can use, and I'll tattle to Milene-sama."

[Having his weakness and just tattling it? You really are a small-minded]

"I don't hate myself for it. I don't mind being impatient. I don't care if I'm small-minded. But I decided to definitely pay Roland back."

[Creare should have some information.]

"I'm looking forward to her report."

When I came back from my study abroad, I was unexplainably promoted to the rank of Marquis --- And I was promoted to the ridiculously high, an upper third rank.

In the Kingdom of Horfalt, only royalty and their close relatives are entitled to titles higher than Count.

The upper third rank in the hierarchy is also a rank where if you are not related to the royal family, you will not be able to advance, no matter how much you accomplish.

Roland bastard shoved those two things at me.

The reason was because of my success in the Arzel Republic, and If I marry Ange, I'll be part of the royal family in the future! Said so, he forced promoting me based on a ridiculous theory.

It's true that my fiancé, Ange, is from a Duke house and has the right to inherit the throne.

However, it was almost impossible for the throne to be passed on to Ange. If it were, it would be a matter of national importance or something.

However, if I could easily become a duke just because I married Ange, I would have no trouble.

Normally, the kingdom would be reluctant to allow me to rise to the rank of Marquis.

In other words, actually, it was an impossible story.

Roland scumbag bastard forced me to advance.

What's sad is that he had that much political power.

According to him, he always has one or two weaknesses of the other nobles.

It's annoying that he is usually so unserious, but only shows his competence at times like this.

In addition, he offered to send the five idiots as my ^{Foster Sons} Parasite .

I'm in the official position of taking care of Marie and the others, and I feel awful.

They are fun to watch from a position where I am not involved, and not funny at all if I am the one who is forced to be responsible.

I'm even more upset that he pushed those guys on me than my career.

Julius, when the other four became my subordinates, said, “I’ll go with you because I’m lonely”. Does he really have any sense of himself as a prince?

— No. If he had, I wouldn’t be in this mess.

Anyway, I was officially forced to take care of Marie and her happy friends.

This is the result of my rampage in the Arzel Republic in an attempt to annoy Roland.

Why do I keep making the same mistakes over and over again?

I lay down on the bed at the inn and went back to chatting with Luxion.

“Ange and Livia are coming over here?”

[Yes. The ceremony is on the last day of spring break, but we have a lot of preparations to make.]

“When I have trouble making a decision, I can ask Ange to help me.”

[For prestigious ceremonies and parties, Angelica’s vast knowledge of noble society is certainly significant.]

“That’s really helpful. I’ve only memorized the bare minimum of etiquette.”

[Please take this opportunity to learn it. If you don’t, you’ll be embarrassed sooner or later.]

“Before you say anything about shame, this situation is a punishment, right? How can the third son of a poor Baron family rise so high in just two years? The next thing I know, I’m the second son and a marquis. And on top of that, I’m supposed to take care of Marie and the others.”

[There are words that are perfect for that. Master just “reap what you sow”]

Two years have passed since I entered the academy.

A lot has happened in the meantime, and my eldest brother, Lutoart, is no longer in the family.

I'm the third son, and I've moved up to the second son, and the eldest brother is my own brother, [Nix].

My parents' house, Baron Bartfalt, will be succeeded by Nix, who has become the eldest son.

And I'm an independent Marquis.

I'm an unemployed marquis with no territory and no position in the royal court.

It's a troublesome situation where there is no real income, but just a useless position.

— It's been a very intense few years.

"I was just selflessly dealing with what was in front of me."

[It's a matter of opinion. I'm sure you're aware of the problem at hand, but you've been neglecting it for whatever reason, and when it's too late, you've just been using forceful methods to solve it?]

This guy really pokes only where it hurts.

"You're really not adorable. More importantly, give me my medicine."

I decided to end the conversation and get some sleep, so I asked Luxion for some medicine.

[Sleeping medicine? You're more tired than usual today, so I think you can sleep without medicine?]

"I've been having insomnia lately. I'm worried, so give it to me."

Sometimes I can't sleep even when I'm tired.

Even if I can sleep, my sleep is so shallow that I end up having trouble sleeping.

If that's the case, just take the medicine from the beginning.

[— It was because of Master shot Serge for the Rault House. You should've let Alberg take that spot.]

“It’s just that I’m used to killing people, and I’m better at it.”

I came to another world and got caught up in war several times.

In that time, I’ve taken many lives with my own hands.

If I kill one or two more people now, it won’t change the scale of my sins.

[Isn’t this the first time you’ve killed someone with a gun yourself? You must have felt the killing more than when you were in armor. You should have left it to Alberg instead of doing something unnecessary. Master made a wrong decision.]

“It’s okay, right”

[No, it’s no good. Because of that, Master has taken on the mental burden. Master should take better care of yourself.]

“Then it’s okay. I love myself, and I can put myself before others.”

[You really do have a big mouth. And in addition, you’re so good at lying and out of control.]

To express his dismay, Luxion goes to the trouble of waving his red lens to the side to show me.

It’s a common sight, but perhaps that’s why he seems to have become more and more adept at waving the lens sideways.

“Just give me the medicine”

[Denied]

“Take it out”

[No]

“This is an order. Give me medicine.”

[Considering the Master’s health, I will exercise my right of veto. Why don’t you spend tonight reflecting on your mistakes?]

“If I sleep well, I’ll be plenty repentant! Just give me the medicine!”

When I grabbed Luxion’s sphere body with both hands, it resisted and struggled wildly.

As he continued to run wildly around the room, the door suddenly opened.

“Leon-san —— What are you doing?”

A pale looking Livia was standing there looking serious when she saw us.

“Livia!? W-Why are you here?”

“I thought it would be a nuisance, but I wanted to see Leon-san —— more importantly, why are you fighting with Luc-kun?”

“Y-You’re wrong. Luxion wouldn’t listen to me, so I thought I’d give him a little scolding.”

I quickly made an excuse to Livia for her sudden appearance, but apparently she had heard our conversation.

“Didn’t you just say something about medicine?”

At an unfortunate time, she heard me fussing about medicine.

“I’m fine. I just need something to help me sleep better. There’s nothing for Livia to worry about. I-I swear.”

Holding Luxion tightly in both hands, I smiled at Livia while trying not to let him go.

However, my efforts were meaningless.

The more excuses I make, the more worried Livia gets.

“Leon-san, you can’t sleep? That’s why you have to take medicine ——”

Livia, who was worried about me, was about to cry, her eyes moist with tears.

“It’s really okay! That was just a joke, in the first place, Luxion and I are usually like this!”

It was a bit like a joke, but from a third person's point of view, I was really screaming, "Medicine, give me medicine!" did it sound like that?

When I looked at Luxion, the red lens glowed slightly in a mysterious way.

"You should say something, too. If you say, That was a joke, it's all over!"

I whispered to Luxion for help, but to my surprise, he betrayed me, his master.

[Olivia, Master is currently in a state of mental danger. I've been advising him to take a break, but he won't listen to me.]

"Why do you betray your master without hesitation!?"

[It's a difference of opinion. I don't think I betrayed you]

"So that's how AIs betrays people. All you do is make excuses that suit you, are you a no-good adult!"

[Oya, self-introduction? Shouldn't you be dealing with Olivia instead?]

I was reluctant to follow Luxion's lead, but I turned my gaze fearfully to Livia.

A tearful Livia wiped her tears with her fingertips and tightened her expression.

"I should have realized this sooner. I'll discuss it with Ange right away. Leon-san, I'm going to let you rest your mind and body for a while."

Ange appears behind Livia, who shows her determination to give me a proper rest.

"That won't be necessary. I could hear you guys talking all the way down the hall. --- Leon, you go back to your parents' house right away and get some rest."

"Eh? No, I am really fine --- "

"Just rest! --- You keep pushing yourself, you idiot"

Even Ange insisted on forcing me to rest, and for some reason, she looked thoughtful.

---Eh? Am I really going back to my parents' house?

Even though I'm going to be busy?

“This traitor”

When I narrowed my eyes and looked at Luxion, he intentionally turned his lens away from me.

[Master needs rest]

“You knew I was going to be busy! I was going to get some things done during spring break.”

Yes —— I was going to be busy from now on.

The stage of that third otome game is set from an academy in the Republic of Arzel back to a school in the Kingdom of Horfalt.

Before the start of the third game, I planned to find out about the girl who would be the main character, as well as information about the capture target.

I was also thinking of confirming the scenario with Marie and then setting up the arrangements.

And I was going to find out if there were any other reincarnated people besides us.

—— In order to avoid repeating the mistakes made in the Republic.

And yet, Luxion wants me to go back to my parents' house.

What is he thinking at this critical time?

As I stared at Luxion, a voice called out to me from the side.

The other party is the same AI as Luxion, [Creare].

It has the same sphere unit as Luxion, but it is white with a blue lens.

Although she can be distinguished from Luxion by her different color, her personality

is very different even though she looks similar.

Despite her petty comments and sarcasm, she has a frivolous personality, unlike the serious Luxion.

However, she is also excellent like Luxion.

[Don't worry, Marie-chan and I will stay behind so you can rest assured.]

When I turn around to look at Creare, I can also see Marie in my field of vision.

Marie tapped her thin chest with her fist.

"Leave it to me, *Ani* — Leon. Creare and I will stay behind and do a thorough search. So, please take care of my allowance!"

My sister from my previous life, [Marie Fou Lafan], wanted pocket money and came forward to take my place.

Creare is also in a good mood.

"Aside from Marie, if Creare stays, there won't be a problem, right?"

"You're cruel?! You should have more faith in me!"

"What do you want me to trust you for? Creare, keep an eye on Marie, too."

[Leave it to me!]

When Luxion saw Creare acting in a very good mood, he seemed to feel something strange.

[Creare, I'm not sure why you want to stay in the capital so badly. I'm sure the old you would have wanted to stay with Master?]

[Actually, I've been having some fun in the capital. I've been doing some experiments, and the results will be out soon. I'll report the results when Master and the others return, so please look forward to it.]

Creare, who used to be an AI managing a laboratory, seems to love experiments of any

kind.

I don't know what she's experimenting with, but I'll look forward to it.

"You're free spirited too, aren't you? Well, you're more likable than Luxion, who betrayed me."

Luxion, who is unhappy that he is being compared to Creare and that his reputation is low, is immediately complaining to me.

[I did not betray you. I've only taken a strong stand against Master because I've decided you need to rest.]

"That's called betrayal."

Luxion comes up to my face and stares intimidatingly at me.

I also put a gun to his head, and Creare intervened from the side.

[Why don't you two get along? Anyway, don't worry about things over here. I'll take good care of Marie-chan, too.]

Showing confidence, Creare usually gets carried away easily, but she gets the job done.

"I'm counting on you. I'm counting on you more than I'm counting on Luxion."

[*Ara, I'm happy*]

I complimented Creare as I glanced at Luxion.

Luxion is not convinced and says, [I don't understand].

I decided to remind Marie as well.

"Marie, if you're not sure about a decision, ask Creare. Don't act on your own. Creare is more reliable than you when it comes to making decisions. Listen to Creare, okay."

Marie is not happy that she is being told to rely more on Creare than herself. However, she seems to be reflecting on what she has done so far and seems to be obeying, albeit reluctantly.

"You don't have to tell me, I'll be very cautious and I'll rely on Creare."

She looked a little stubborn, but after such a reminder, Marie would not act on her own.

I look at Creare.

"I'll leave over here to you. If there's anything wrong, call me right away. If anything happens, I'll rush right away."

[You worry too much, Master. I'll make sure all the information is gathered and all the experiments are done perfectly.]

If possible, I would like you to do your best to collect information.

What exactly is she experimenting with?

--Well, there is a possibility that I can't understand it even if I hear it, so I don't have to ask now.

"Experimenting is fine, but don't forget to gather information. Also, stay as far away from the target and the main character as possible. If there's anything unusual, don't get involved until after I return. If there's anything urgent, be sure to contact me"

[I've heard it many times. You should have more faith in us.]

When Creare complains about me being a nag, Marie takes advantage of it.

"That's right. *Aniki* should trust us more and take a break. *Aniki* is probably more tired than you think, you know?"

I didn't think Marie would be worried about me.

There was no sign of Ange or Livia around, only us, so before I knew it, Marie was back to calling me *aniki*.

" -- Well, fine. If you succeed, I'll increase your monthly allowance."

"Thank you!"

Creare looked at Marie with interest as she raised her hands and looked happy.

[Marie-chan really loves money, don't you?]

"Un, I love money!"

If this were a statement from an ignorant child, I could laugh bitterly, but in Marie's case, it's not funny because she wants money for her living expenses.

I can't even smile bitterly.

I felt a little pity for Marie, who realize a reverse harem with the capture targets, and was at my mercy because she wanted money for her living expenses.

As I looked at Marie with mixed feelings, Ange approached me with her footsteps a little louder.

She grabbed my arm forcefully.

I felt slightly uneasy, Ange acting in a way that she usually did not.

"Leon, it's time to go."

Ange, who gives Marie a complicated look, pulls me along.

"I understand. I can walk on my own."

"Just come"

Standing next to me, Ange just twined her arms around mine.

Luxion floats around my right shoulder and explains the situation to me.

[Master is as dense as ever, isn't he? Ange is jealous of Master's closeness to Marie.]

"Jealous?"

I stopped, startled by Luxion's words, and hurried to look at Ange's face.

There, I see Ange blushing.

She was embarrassed, and her clinging to my arm grew stronger.

“Luxion, you don’t seem to understand the woman’s heart either. If you do understand, don’t say it in front of the person. I-I’m embarrassed too.”

[Next time, I will try to handle it carefully]

“You sound like you’re playing dumb.”

[I will be careful, but whether I can do it is another matter. In the first place, I did not maliciously share Angelica’s feelings to Master.]

“If it’s malicious, it’s even worse.”

I snickered at Luxion for not understanding the woman’s heart.

“You said it. Why don’t you learn about women’s hearts, too?”

[It’s a difficult problem for me, an AI, but you’re right, Master. I regret that I was wrong this time. I deeply apologize, Angelica]

Luxion, who was honestly apologizing, looked uncomfortable to me.

Ange accepts the apology with an embarrassed, “U-Umu”, and her appearance looks lovely.

[However, I have a question. Aside from me, an AI — it’s a big problem when a human, master can’t understand the woman’s heart any better than I can. Isn’t this an area where you can’t lose to artificial intelligence? As a man—No, as a human being, aren’t you ashamed of yourself?]

He blames me, daring me to admit fault.

Did he even learn that little trick to blame me?

“You’ve become a quite smooth talker, haven’t you?”

[If I stay by the Master’s side, sadly, I’ll improve, even if I don’t like it.]

Luxion, no matter what I say, he’ll talk back.

I'd like to see you acknowledge me as your master and show me a little respect, even only a little.

CHAPTER 1

MATCHMAKING

Arrived at the port of Baron Bartfalt.

The harbor is now more crowded than it was a few years ago, as it has been upgraded to allow large airships to enter and exit the harbor.

Before I entered the school, it was a small port, much more desolate than it is now.

It makes me happy to see it developing so much.

“There is an unfamiliar airship”

Visible from the deck of the Einhorn was a luxurious airship docked in the harbor.

It was not an airship owned by my family, nor was it a merchant ship with which I was normally associated.

The family crest is clearly visible on the overly decorated airships favored by the nobility.

Ange, who was also on the deck, was squinting at the family crest.

“It’s the Roseblade House”

“Deirdre-senpai, huh?”

My house has no connection to the Roseblade house, so if they were to come, it would be [Deirdre Fou Roseblade].

She is two years older than me and has already graduated from school.

She is a unique girl, a picture-perfect blonde-haired, blue-eyed young lady.

She has long hair in a vertical roll, likes to be flashy, and is always sparkling.

Because she is actually a Countess, she is a real lady.

However, I'm not good with her because of her personality.

She's not a bad person, so I'll at least have tea with her.

She was supposed to be working as an envoy in a kingdom that was currently short-staffed.

What would such a senior want with me?

I don't think she had any business at my parents' house. Did she come all the way here to see me?

Originally, I was supposed to be in the royal capital —— but as I was pondering this, Ange let out a small sigh.

She seemed to have an attitude that said, 'This is too much trouble'.

"Roseblade family has moved?"

"Eh?"

When I don't understand, Ange gives me a simple explanation.

"Think carefully. Not many people know that Leon is going back to your parents' house. It wasn't that the Roseblade family had been out ahead of us, but normally you would think that the Roseblade family is visiting the Bartfalt house on business, wouldn't you?"

Hearing that, Livia claps her hands as if she was convinced.

"That's right when you say it."

It was good that Livia understood, but I still had my doubts.

How did the Roseblade, a Count house, end up in a countryside house of Baron?

Seeing that I wasn't convinced, Ange seemed to know something but hesitated to answer.

“Well, I wonder what they are doing here”

“I’m home ~”

When I got back to my parents’ house, I opened the front door with a carefree voice and went inside.

Even though it’s a Baron’s mansion, my parents’ house is in the remote countryside.

It has nothing to do with a formal atmosphere.

Such a family home was filled with an unusual atmosphere.

Is it that the air is different?

It feels more tense than usual.

One of the maids noticed that we had returned and rushed over to us in a hurry.

The one who showed a disqualified attitude for a maid was the elf, Yumeria-san.

“W-Welcome back! I’m so sorry. We were, *ano*, busy, so we couldn’t welcome you back.”

Seeing her hurriedly bow her head, the eyes of the maids who were waiting behind Ange became somewhat more severe.

Cordelia-san said, “You haven’t changed, have you?” She was a little astonished but seemed to be happy to see her again.

“You have a visitor, right? Deirdre-senpai?”

When I confirmed who the guest was, Yumeria-san nodded heavily several times.

“Y-Yes! A-Ano, that! I-It’s matchmaking talk!”

” —— Ha?”

When I suddenly hear about matchmaking, for a moment I imagine matchmaking

between myself and Deirdre-senpai.

“I’m on matchmaking? No, I have Ange and Livia!”

When I hurriedly said I couldn’t, Luxion interrupted and tattled.

[You also have Noelle?]

“Shut up for now. —— Anyway, it’s a problem if they suddenly call me for matchmaking.”

I glanced at Ange and Livia behind me, but they seemed to be calmer than I was.

Arere? They don’t mind if I go on matchmaking?

I was expecting them to be angry, but their reaction was different from what I expected, which confused me.

Yumeria-san was tilting her head in front of me.

“Eh? What are you talking about?”

“So it’s matchmaking between me and Deirdre-senpai, right?”

When I questioned her about it, Yumeria-san looked troubled.

—— Is it wrong? Just when I thought that, a woman appears, wearing high-heeled shoes and making a clacking sound.

She was too dazzlingly dressed for a countryside mansion and looked out of proportion to the surrounding scenery.

“*Ara-Ara*, I’m so pleased with your enthusiastic offer”

“*Senpai?*”

The one there was Deirdre-senpai, with her fan opened and covered her mouth.

However, there was a wicked smile in her eyes.

She’s laughing at my misunderstanding.

When Ange stepped in front of me, she put her hands on her hips and faced Deirdre-senpai.

“Long time no see. So, is it you, Deirdre, who’s going on the matchmaking with Nix-dono?”

The mention of Nix’s name was the first time I realized that my brother Nix was going on matchmaking.

— I’m a little embarrassed that I jumped the gun so quickly.

Luxion is looking at me with red lenses as I blush a little, but I’ll ignore him.

Deirdre-senpai folds up her fan and replies with a wicked smile.

“It’s not me. It’s my big sister, Dorothea, who’s will become a partner of Nix-dono.”

“Dorothea of all people”

Ange, who had a stern look a moment ago, showed a subtle expression.

From what she just said and the expression on her face, it seems that Dorothea-san is quite a problem.

Deirdre-senpai also averted her gaze from Ange, so she must have something on her mind.

“She’s a beautiful woman, even from me, her little sister’s point of view.”

“No one is complaining about her appearance.”

She seemed to be a beautiful woman from Deirdre-senpai’s point of view, but from their reactions, I couldn’t help but feel that she had some kind of problem other than her looks.

When I walked into the room where my dad and Nix were, they were both holding their hands over their heads.

Their gestures are so similar that I feel a blood connection.

I dare to speak in a cheerful voice for the two who have a heavy atmosphere.

“*Onii-chan*, congratulations!”

I teased them lightly, and they both looked up and glared at me.

The timing and even the look on their face are very similar.

My father complains as if yelling.

“What do you mean, “Congratulations”! Do you even understand this situation!?”

I sat down on the sofa in my room, shrugging my shoulders at the sight of my father, who was red-faced and angry.

I sat down next to Nix and rested my body against the backrest.

“Isn’t it just a joke?”

“I can’t laugh at that joke.”

Unsuccessfully trying to lighten the mood, I turn my attention to Nix.

“Dorothea-san, right? Does *aniki* know what kind of person she is?”

Dorothea-san, the older sister of Deirdre-senpai, was apparently a third-year student when Nix was a freshman at the school. That means she’s four years older than me.

Therefore, the other was not acquainted at the school.

When I asked Nix if he knew, he put his hand over his mouth and made a difficult expression.

“I’ve seen her a few times at school. But I’m in the regular class and she’s a countess in the advanced class. I didn’t expect to get involved, so I don’t know any of the details.”

Nix prefaced his speech with “just” and then told me a story about that time.

"She was a hard person to get close to. The advanced class people were also distant, and I think the number of followers was small for a Countess."

"A cool beauty?"

For Nix, who was in the regular class, Dorothea-san, who was in the advanced class, would be a tall order.

"I guess so. She was a beautiful person, but she seemed cold and unapproachable?"

"If she is beautiful, then it's fine, right."

"You idiot! I'm the heir of a Baron and she's the daughter of a Count! It's not balanced. The Count's daughter is going to marry into this house. It doesn't make sense!?"

From our point of view, the daughter of the prestigious Roseblade house is an existence above the clouds.

It's true that we are also noblemen with titles, but if I were to compare us to a previous life, we would be a small business running a small business in the countryside.

On the other hand, they're a big company that everyone knows in the city, I thought?

It's definitely not a good match, and if I were in Nix's shoes, I'd walk away from this matchmaking.

"What if you refuse?"

I asked a simple question, but I also understood that this was impossible.

In a previous life, we could have simply said no, but in this world, it's a different story.

The other party is a higher rank. Moreover, this time, the other side is willing to take the risk.

It was my father who answered my obvious question.

"It is impossible, of course. We're dealing with a prestigious Count house."

Unlike a house like ours, that one has power, wealth — and military might.

If we refuse, it means that their face has been smeared with mud.

The Count's family went to the trouble of asking the Baron's family for matchmaking, only to have the proposal rejected — a laughing matter in noble society.

I try to act cheerful to lighten the atmosphere a little.

"I'm a Marquis now."

"It's still an act of slandering the other party's face. In the first place, why would the Count house do such a thing? What do they expect from a countryside nobleman like us?"

Dad and Nix are both scratching their heads in question.

Normally, this matchmaking story itself would be impossible.

If they succeeded, it would still be better, but if they failed, the Roseblade house would be the laughing stock of noble society for a while.

In every world, there are people who want to laugh at other people.

The Roseblade house would not expect this matchmaking to be rejected.

If we refuse, they will surely retaliate.

The Count house asked for it, and the Baron family refuses! — like that.

That's absurd from our point of view, the Bartfalt family.

It's a problem because it can be allowed.

But under normal circumstances, this would never have happened.

This matchmaking itself is so irregular that both my father and Nix are having trouble and holding their heads.

"Is it a matchmaking or a face-to-face meeting? And then you get married."

I mumble, and Nix replies with a hanging head.

"That's right. I didn't think I could have a free marriage. But this is too much, isn't it? I --- I would have preferred a more relaxed marriage like Dad."

Dad and Mom are a picture-perfect couple.

Noticing my father's gaze, I turn my head.

"Why are you staring at me?"

"Do you know the story about me being suspected of cheating because of you?"

"What? Eh, did dad have an affair? You're the worst."

When I imagine my father cheating, my outraged father shouts out.

"I don't want to be told to you!"

Dad started to tell me that he was suspected of cheating, and I was surprised that I was responsible for it.

I don't want you to blame others.

When he is angry at a suspicion he doesn't remember, Nix lets out a sigh and then explains the situation to me.

"You were in the royal capital as soon as you came back from studying abroad. I don't think you know what's going on in our house, but couples don't get along well right now."

"Because dad was suspected of cheating?"

I looked at my dad, thinking what a horrible guy he was, and saw him cross his arms and shake his legs in frustration.

"Whose fault do you think it was that I was suspected? It's all your fault."

"You can't blame me for everything"

"It's your fault this time, too!"

When I looked at Nix, thinking that Dad couldn't be talked out of it, I saw that he had his hand on his forehead and was looking up at the ceiling.

"You lived with Marie when you studied abroad, didn't you?"

"Circumstances forced me to do it. I even got permission from Ange and Livia."

"I'm surprised those two agreed to it. But at that time, we sent Yumeria-san to you, didn't we? That's when Mom told her to keep an eye on you."

"I heard. I'm such a serious guy, and it's sad that my family doubted me."

I'm sad that my family doesn't believe me.

Even in my previous life, my parents trusted my sister more than me.

Is this life the same, or why am I so not trusted?

When I shake my head and say, 'yare-yare', both Dad and Nix narrow their eyes and give me a cold stare.

"This is what Yumeria-san told us. You seem to have been called *aniki* by Marie?"

"— Eh?"

I was convinced that I was innocent, but apparently, it had been a misunderstanding.

Dad hit the table with his hand repeatedly to protest.

"Thanks to you, I was suspected of having an affair with the Wife of Lafan House! And I heard that the daughter of one of the Republic's great nobles called you her brother! I'm more than willing to find out what the hell is going on!"

I got a cold sweat.

For Marie's part, I was called *aniki* on a daily basis at the Republic mansion.

I didn't think they'd hear about her carelessness.

And then there is Louise-san, which is very complicated to explain.

"No, Marie is that, you know. Like a step-sibling? Look, we're not related by blood, but I was like a big brother to her. And Louise-san, she said that I looked like her dead brother. Yeah, it's just a misunderstanding."

Apparently, Yumeria-san had dutifully reported everything to Mom.

Because of that, the Bartfalt house seems to be on edge at the moment.

— I'm certainly not uninvolved.

"I-I'm sorry. I'll apologize to Mom. It's impossible for Dad to have an affair, right? If you think calmly about it, there's no way Marie and Louise-san are Dad's children."

"I said it too! I told her, but it would be hard to prove it!"

Dad has a vague memory of that time, and he seems to be unable to deny everything in an orderly fashion.

It's impossible — but he can't get the evidence together.

In the first place, it is difficult to call the person in question and ask what happened.

Marie's parents' house is disappearing in all sorts of messes.

They did not participate in the war with the Principality of Fannouse, and fled, only to be destroyed.

Louise-san is also impossible.

The Republic is busy with reconstruction, but it is not possible to summon a great nobleman from another country because of the family problems of the Bartfalt family.

"Why is this happening to me? Ruth avoids me when I talk to her, and the Roseblade House is offering me matchmaking — What did I do? What did I do to deserve this"

I felt so sorry when I saw my dad dropping his head in his chair.

"Somehow, I'm sorry. Yes, as an apology I'll ruin *aniki's* matchmaking for you."

I wondered what I could do to help my family, so I decided to let the matchmaking fail.

Both Dad and Nix look at my suggestion with suspicion.

Nix seems to be worried that I'm going to screw something up.

"Did you hear what we said? We're in a position where we can't say no."

"I have a good idea. We don't have to say no to them, they just have to say no."

"They'll refuse? Is that possible?"

"Leave it to me"

I'm ashamed to admit that I've been a repeated failure at tea parties at the school.

I know from experience what will make the women of the kingdom uncomfortable.

I've made many unsuccessful attempts to invite women to tea parties for marriage.

In other words, I'm an expert at making mistakes when it comes to matchmaking.

"I'm a man who has failed at many tea parties at the school. It's hard to succeed, but I'm good at failing."

Dad had found hope, and his hips were raised off the couch.

"That's a pathetic line, but it's certainly the only time I can count on you! Also, Leon, you'll have to explain the situation to your mother later."

"Think *you're in a great boat*. I'm going to ruin *aniki's* matchmaking." (*TLN: metaphor for gaining a reliable foundation and be in a safe condition*)

Nix gave me a complicated look, but accepted that it would be fine if the Count's daughter didn't become his wife.

"That's right. If Dorothea-senpai refuses, this matter will be over. For once, I'll reluctantly rely on you"

I'm concerned about the thorny way they both talk, but I'll do my best for the family.

"Leave it to me. I never fail."

Are? Should I have said there's only failure here?

At that time.

Leon's mother, [Ruth], was visiting the guest room of the mansion.

Now a woman is using the room.

"I can understand what Barkas is saying. He was very busy at that time, so he didn't have time to play. But I can't say it never happened, because Barkas went to the royal capital many times."

While wiping away tears with a handkerchief, the person to whom Ruth complained was [Noelle Jill Lespinasse].

Her hair was in a gradient of gold and pink, and Noelle had tied it up in a side ponytail on the right side.

Her yellow eyes gazed gently at Ruth, her normally lively face now serious as she listened to her story.

Noelle was living at Leon's parents' house.

Noelle is currently using a wheelchair, but has recently undergone rehabilitation.

With the support of Luxion and Creare, she was recovering well.

The reason why Ruth is visiting Noelle's room is to have her listen to her complaints.

Noelle put on a cheerful voice to cheer up the anxious Ruth.

"I'm sure it's okay!"

(Having said that, I've also seen Marie-chan calling Leon '*aniki*' a few times. At first, I thought they were really brother and sister.)

Although she told Ruth that it would be fine, inwardly Noelle was a little worried.

Although Leon and Marie's appearance was not similar, she still had the feeling that they had something in common. The atmosphere and the distance between them made it hard to believe that they were strangers.

In fact, she was surprised to find out later that they were unrelated.

With that in mind, she comforted the wife of the Bartfalt house who was taking care of her — her future mother-in-law.

"He's not the kind of person who can lie to Mother-in-law."

From Noelle's point of view, it didn't even look like Barkas was lying.

Ruth wiped away her tears.

"Thank you, Noelle-chan. I'm so happy that Noelle-chan is going to be Leon's wife."

"*E-Etto* — the third, though."

Ruth's expression darkens as she sees Noelle forcing a smile.

The third part made her feel responsible, as his mother.

"I really don't know how this could have happened. I think Angelica-sama and Livia-chan are both good girls. But because of the status. Livia-chan gets nervous when I approach her. In the first place, it never crossed my mind that Leon would marry the three girls."

Ruth's worries — It's not just about Leon, it's about her distance between Ange and Livia.

Ange is a genuine young lady, and from Livia's point of view, Ruth is the wife of a noble.

Inevitably, Livia gets more nervous and creates more distance.

They hadn't really gotten to know each other, and Ruth seemed to feel closer to Noelle, who was easy to talk to. She could not ask for advice or complain in this way, nor could she do so to Ange or Livia.

"Even though I was born in a respectable family, but I was raised as a commoner, you

know?"

"I was raised the same way. I'm a legitimate wife now, but I didn't really come from a background that would make me a baroness."

Perhaps it was a good match for the lively Noelle, but the two of them got to know each other and talked often.

Lately, Ruth has been more proactive in talking to her.

"Thanks to that, children's education is just a problem — "

"Noelle-neechaan!"

Just as Ruth was about to bring up the subject of children, the door was violently opened and Colin burst into the room.

A young boy with black hair and a childish look with teary eyes asks Noelle for help.

"What's wrong, Colin?"

Noelle catches Colin in a hug.

Ruth scolded him for it, but Noelle was not concerned, so she said, "It's okay," and gently patted Colin on the back.

She gently stroked Colin's back.

"What happen today?"

"Finley-neechan is terrible! She eats my candy and doesn't apologize. She says it's not her fault that she ate it, and I guess she's irritated by that or something, because she takes it out on me."

Hearing that, Ruth let out a small sigh.

"That girl is, good grief. But Colin, you can't do that either. You can't bother Noelle-chan like that."

"Mom too, you're always consulting with Noelle-neechan, right?"

"T-That and this is not the same thing!"

Listening to the family's conversation, Noelle felt a little sad.

(If my parents were still alive, would we have been able to have this conversation?)

Noelle doesn't have any good memories of her parents.

But then again, maybe — just maybe, could she have had a normal life like this? Noelle patted Colin's head roughly as she faced the warm home she wanted to have.

"You're a boy, right. You need to be more firm."

"Both Finley-neechan and Jenna-neechan are scary when they get angry. Leon-niichan also runs away when they get angry. Leon-niichan is a hero of the country and he's supposed to be strong, but he can't beat his sisters."

To Colin, a child, Leon is a hero and admiration of the country.

However, even such a Leon could not beat Jenna and Finley — or so he thought.

"*Un*, maybe Leon will run away."

Noelle nodded, imagining Leon running away from the two sisters, and Ruth put her hand on her cheek and looked convinced.

"He runs away from trouble, you know. Is that a good thing or a bad thing?"

If he was really good at what he did, he could have avoided the situation of being made a marquis.

His mother, Ruth, understood this very well.

Noelle brings her face closer to Colin's.

"Don't worry. When Leon gets serious, neither of them could stand a chance. Ask him next time. If Colin tells him, I'm sure he'll scold both of them."

If it was a request from his precious brother, Leon would be prepared to challenge his sisters.

“Or do you want me to tell them directly?”

“I-I’m fine!”

Before Colin knew it, his face was bright red, and he raised his hands in the air in front of Noelle.

“I’m going to scold them properly! Noelle-neechan, just watch me!”

“Good boy”

Noelle’s praise made Colin look very happy.

But when Ruth saw Colin, she smiled a little sadly at him.

After the meeting with Dad and Nix, I came to one of the rooms in the mansion.

As usual, Luxion is by my side, but today Ange and Livia are with me.

The reason I gathered the three of us together was to discuss the matchmaking with the Roseblade house.

“You’re going to screw up Nix-dono’s matchmaking? Leon, are you serious?”

“Yes”

After all the trouble I’ve caused my family, I’m going to give them a serious hand this time.

Livia looks worried.

“Is it really okay? It’s brother-in-law’s matchmaking, right?”

“He doesn’t like it, you know. Nix says she’s a beautiful woman who’s hard to get close to. Also, he said if the Count’s daughter became his wife, he’d afraid of her.”

“Even though she’s beautiful, but he doesn’t want her?”

“Because there are various things for men.”

At first, the boys at the school go for the beautiful girls, but gradually they switch to focus on personality.

The reason? Because even if the face is good, if the personality is terrible, it's tiresome.

Beautiful women should be dealt with by men with wealth and power.

The ideal is a woman who looks good and has a good inside.

—Oya? This is about Ange and Livia? Noelle falls under that category, too.

It seems I was one of the very few winners.

“It’s more about personality than looks. Let’s get Dorothea-san, who seems to be a problem child, to shake off Nix. That way, we can smear each other’s faces and draw this case to a close. It’s all going to work out, right?”

It shouldn’t be a problem if I fail! I asked Ange to confirm.

I’m a man who has made many selfish decisions that have failed me.

So, this time, I sought the help of Ange, who was well versed in noble society.

And Ange, she looks a little happier.

“Indeed, if Dorothea refuses, I’m sure it will be as Leon says. If we succeed, the Roseblade house will not retaliate.”

Ange’s approval was given.

However, Livia put her finger to her lips and raised her face slightly.

“Leon-san is a marquis, and Ange is here, so why are they trying to touch us? It was the other side that brought the idea to us in the first place, wasn’t it? I think it’s inevitable that she would reject him.”

Why can’t we just refuse like normal? Ange smiled and replied to Livia’s comment.

"A good argument, but the Count's face would be ruined if his daughter was rejected as a bride. As a nobleman, he can't keep quiet."

"Is that how it is?"

"In a noble society, if you're underestimated, you're finished. But if it's Leon's plan, it will end up destroying the face of the Roseblade house."

"Eh? They are still going to be angry?"

"After offering matchmaking, if his own daughter refused to marry him, the Roseblade house would be laughing stocks. When it was his own daughter who suggested the idea and made it fail, he would only be laughed at more if he complained. If that happens, maybe they'll just pretend the whole matchmaking thing never happened."

When I saw Ange looking happy for some reason, I knew that my idea was more effective than I thought.

"R-Right? No, I thought it was a brilliant move too."

When I try to cover it up by smiling, Luxion interrupts me as usual.

[Do you think Master would think that much? If the other party refuses, then the matchmaking talk will have never happened --- that's the extent of his thinking. He didn't think that deeply about it.]

He blabbered on about my feelings without my permission.

"If you know how I feel, you'd better shut up about it. If you don't tell them, I'll look like an intelligent man, right? You need to be more careful."

[I'll be careful when I feel like it.]

You told Ange before that you'd 'take the appropriate action', but when it comes to me you said that? Isn't this guy really taking me lightly?

"Anyway, I feel bad for the Roseblade house, but I want this whole matchmaking thing to fail."

Livia does not seem to be on board.

"Is it really okay to let it fail? I think it's disrespectful to them, and I think we should talk about it first."

Gentle Livia insisted that Nix and Dorothea-san should talk to each other first.

Ange didn't deny it, but she didn't affirm it either.

"They marry each other for the sake of the house, not because they like each other. A relationship like ours is a rare one. I don't know what will happen if they talk."

Just as Nix couldn't turn down this offer, Dorothea-san was unlikely to turn it down due to her house's situation.

But for Nix's sake, I'm going to let this matter fail.

I'm sorry to Deirdre-senpai, but my family comes first.

Luxion will confirm the situation.

[The Roseblade house is well prepared. They've already put Dorothea on the airship. As soon as she's ready, they'll set up a meeting. Is there anything I need to prepare for you before then?]

"That's right — Could get you a collar?"

When I mentioned the collar, both Ange and Livia went expressionless.

Luxion also shows a gesture of "Master is saying strange things again".

But the collar is also a very important item to make the matchmaking fail.

Bartfalt territory port.

On the deck of the Roseblade house's airship, which was docked, there was a figure of Dorothea.

Dorothea, gazing out over the Bartfalt territorial harbor from the deck, kept the servants around her at a distance with a nonchalant expression.

Then Deirdre arrives, having boarded the airship from the landing ramp.

“*Onee-sama*, the talk is settled.”

” — So”

Like Deirdre, Dorothea is a blonde-haired, blue-eyed woman with long, silky, straight hair.

Her clothes, unlike Deirdre’s, were dressed in a simple and elegant manner. She was a woman who did not like ornaments, preferring simple designs.

But right now, she is playing with her beautiful hair with her fingertips with no expression.

Her attitude conveyed her lack of interest in the Bartfalt family and the people she was visiting.

Deirdre shrugged her shoulders in astonishment.

“*Onee-sama*, this one-time *Tou-sama* will not allow you to refuse.”

“I understand.”

Dorothea’s gaze is downward, and her attitude is dubious as to whether she really understands.

But, for once, she asks Deirdre about her partner.

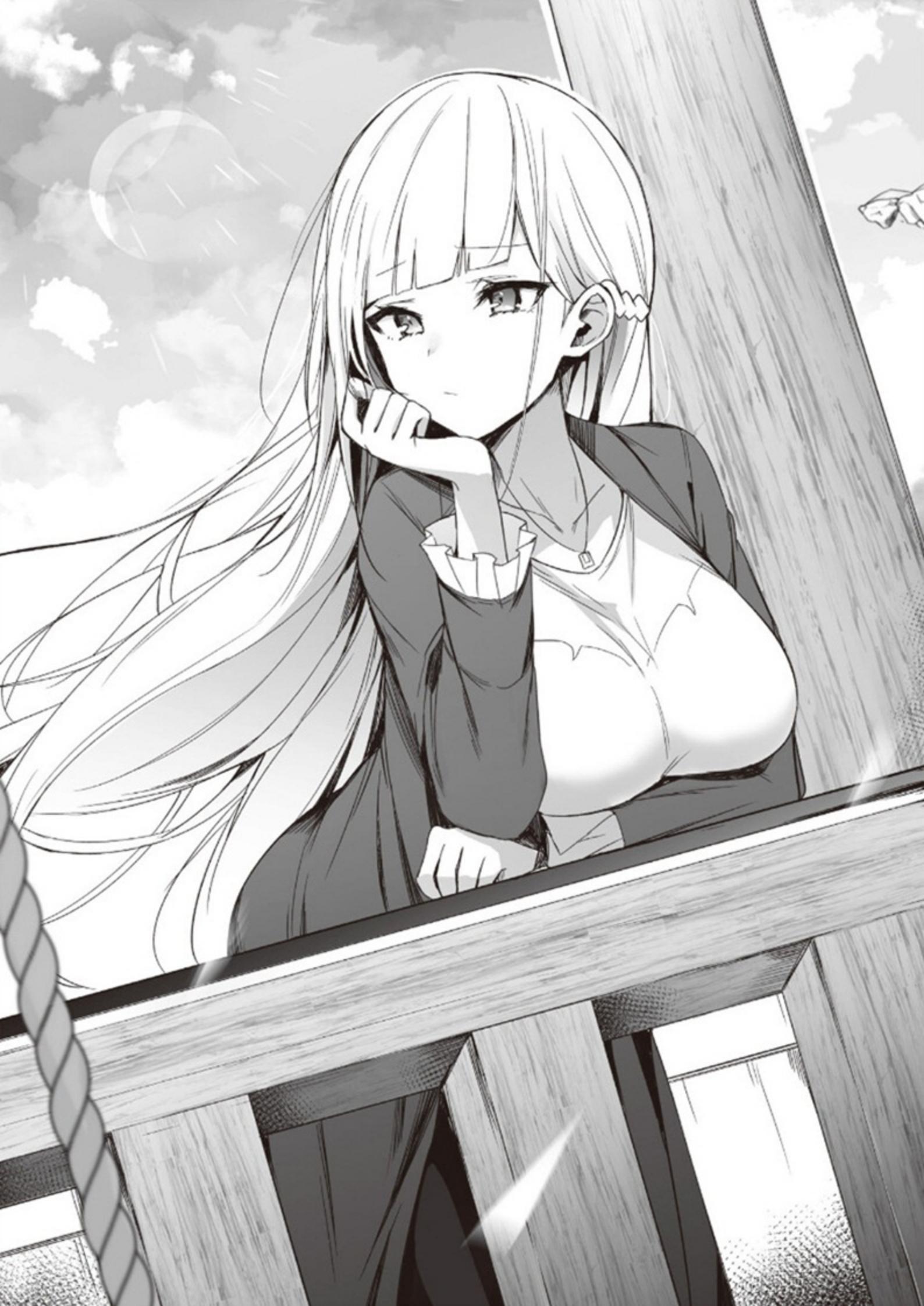
“So, what kind of man is my partner?”

Deirdre is a little dazed and troubled, but talks about Nix.

“I’m sure you’ve been informed beforehand.”

“I want to know the evaluation from Deirdre’s perspective.”

” — Put in a better way, he’s serious person. Put in a worse way, he is an unremarkable older brother who hides behind his younger brother. But I suppose it can’t be helped when the younger brother is such a hero.”



Compared to Leon, who ran rampant in the Kingdom of Horfalt and the Republic of Arzel, his older brother, Nix, would seem rather plain.

However, Dorothea seemed even less interested.

She looked blankly into the distance.

“Boring man”

Deirdre let out a small sigh, tapped her shoulder a few times with her fan, and looked at Dorothea’s profile.

“I’m also in trouble with *Onee-sama*’s high hopes.”

Dorothea folded her arms under her large breasts and looked into the distance without replying.

CHAPTER 2

FACE-TO-FACE

The prestigious Roseblade family.

According to Deirdre-senpai, her ancestors were recognized as nobles by the kingdom after a great adventure.

After that, they played an active role in many adventures, and now contribute to the kingdom as a count.

They have a long history, and their contribution to the kingdom is incomparable to that of the Bartfalt family.

In contrast, the Bartfalt family is less active as adventurers.

The beginning itself is complicated, as much as I did my best to get Luxion.

Her ancestor took part in the war and took credit for it.

With the reward for doing so, he became a small lord, and has been living modestly ever since.

The Kingdom of Horfalt was founded by adventurers, and when you become an adventurer, you are respected by those around you.

In other words, the evaluation is low if it is established otherwise.

In contrast to the Roseblade family, which has been very active, the Bartfalt family is a family that has continued in a modest way.

The Bartfalt family is approached by the prestigious Roseblade family for matchmaking.

I have no idea what the other side is thinking.

However, the matchmaking gets off to the worst possible start.

“I’m Nix”

“I know. Didn’t you hear the story in advance?”

“— I’m sorry. I knew it”

“Then, stop with the troublesome greetings.”

It’s a pity to watch this matchmaking, but the boys at the school can’t be broken down by something like this.

Me and Luxion gathered in another room.

Also with us were Ange and Livia — and Noelle in her wheelchair.

The five of us are watching a live video projected on the wall, and in contrast to Nix’s nervousness, Dorothea-san’s attitude is quite bad.

She folded her arms and looked at Nix with a measured look, then averted her gaze and didn’t even try to look at him.

“A-Ano, what’s your hobby?”

“—Ha~a, you are a really boring man.”

“I’m sorry”

Even if he talks to her with the standard stuff, Dorothea-san won’t take him seriously as seen here.

I feel sorry for Nix.

Noelle, unable to stand it, shakes her head in disbelief.

“What a terrible matchmaking. The other person doesn’t seem to be willing to talk at all. Isn’t this going to fail without Leon’s help?”

I agree with Noelle’s opinion, but Ange denies it.

“That’s not going to happen. If this is matchmaking, the priority is the connection

between the houses. The individual's wishes are not even a consideration."

When Ange made a sharp point, Livia looked down sadly.

"When I think about it, I feel sorry for both of them. They don't even like each other, but they're bound together for the sake of the house."

Ange, who seemed composed, was now staring at Dorothea on the screen.

She was also annoyed with Dorothea-san's attitude, although she said it can't be helped.

"It's just that normally people are a little more approachable. The rumors about her being too choosy were true."

I decided to talk to Ange, who seemed to know something about it.

I wanted to get as much information about Dorothea-san as I could, but I couldn't watch Nix in the video for any length of time as he seemed to be in pain.

"Rumor?"

"That's what she looks like. There was no end to the number of men who asked her to marry them, both while she was in school and after she graduated. But all the matchmaking attempts failed. There were rumors that she had a problem."

She was beautiful, and it was no wonder that many men had proposed marriage to her.

If so, what was the problem that kept her from getting married?

"Does she hate men? Or maybe she's got her heart set on someone?"

"There's no sign or rumor that Dorothea has a partner, either opposite or same gender."

She doesn't like the same sex, nor does she seem to have a partner in mind.

And yet keep failing at matchmaking?

“Ah, Dorothea-san is—”

When Livia’s voice brought my attention back to the image, I saw Dorothea-san move.

A few moments ago, she hadn’t even looked at Nix’s face, but only now was she giving him a serious look.

“Do you have the resolve to be my pet?”

“Eh, pet”

Ange let out a small sigh, and Livia’s expression disappeared from her face.

Noelle is surprised to hear a clatter from her wheelchair, but knowing the girls at the school, I’m not surprised.

Noelle shakily pointed at the image.

“What did this person say?”

I guess she was hoping that she had misheard, but her hopes were crushed by Luxion.

[She declared that she wanted to make her matchmaking partner a pet. It’s rare for a family above the rank of Count, but Deirdre has also said in the past that she wants to make Master a pet. I guess the sisters like to make people submissive]

“No, that’s no good!”

Livia is a little touched by Noelle’s obvious reaction.

“Normally, that would be true. But the kingdom’s academy is a little bit special.”

As Livia’s expression immediately clouded, Ange tried to reassure Noelle.

“It’s better than before”

From my point of view, it’s not something I’m interested in since I’m free from the marriage hunting life.

But I’m interested to see how much the school has changed in the year we were

abroad.

— Although looking at Jenna in the mansion, I'm starting to think it's a long shot.

In the video, Dorothea, who has lost interest in Nix, who is at a loss to answer, gets up and leaves the room without saying a word.

When the video cut off, we both let out a sigh at the same time.

Ange tells us the rest of the rumor she just heard.

"Looks like the bad rumors are true."

Is there something more? I asked for a detailed explanation.

"What rumors?"

"She asks a bad question and presses for an answer, but no matter which answers Dorothea receives, she is not satisfied and leaves the table. If it's the question she just asked, she'll give you a disdainful look if you say you want to be her pet, and a disinterested look if you refuse. In the end, she won't be satisfied with either answer."

Nix being dumbfounded and unable to answer, is this a disinterested pattern?

She has given him two choices, and she is not satisfied with either answer? If he doesn't answer, that's wrong too?

What a bad question.

Luxion makes a few predictions about this question.

[There may be a third answer to this question that has not been provided. Or perhaps the question itself implies her rejection?]

Ange seems to have the same opinion as Luxion.

"I think it's the latter"

Instead of hating him because he got the answer wrong, she asks this question because she hates him from the start?

Sure, she was troublesome, but I felt better about the situation now.

“But I guess this won’t be a problem even if I don’t help.”

Dorothea-san is not interested in Nix and will pretend that this matchmaking talk never happened.

It’s a relief to know that we accomplished our goal without doing anything.

However, Luxion shows the next image.

[It is because of such carelessness that Master repeatedly fails in important points.]

“What did you say?”

I was about to poke him, but I saw Deirdre-senpai and Dorothea-san in the video.

Deirdre-senpai is rushing to her sister Dorothea-san.

“What are you thinking, *onee-sama*? This time, even *Otou-sama* won’t forgive you.”

The servants of the Roseblade family were also around, surrounding Dorothea-san to keep her from escaping.

The person has a face that has given up.

“I understand. I just bet on the last possibility.”

“I want you to stop even joking.”

From the looks of the two of them, it would apparently be difficult to pretend that the matchmaking never happened.

I press my head with my right hand and change my mind, thinking that I have no choice but to do it.

“I guess they’re more serious than I thought.”

I don’t understand why the prestigious Roseblade family would be interested in a weak frontier baron family.

Because I'm here? But I'm a marquis independent from my parents' house.

The faction, or rather the backer, is the Dukes Redgrave, Ange's parents' family.

It would be pointless to try to take us in — As I was thinking about this, I noticed Ange looking at me with her hand on her chin.

She seems to be more concerned about my reaction than matchmaking.

"Speaking of which, what does Ange think about *aniki*'s marriage? Has your family said anything about it?"

I asked, and Ange shrugged and shook her head.

"Nothing. You can do whatever you want."

I'm grateful that they don't interfere, but does that mean that Duke Redgrave isn't interested in my family?

Livia looks at me and looks worried.

"Leon-san, are you really going to do it? I think you should stop it after all."

"I can't back down after coming this far. Don't worry. I'm good at making matchmaking fail."

I answered with a smile, and Noelle, who didn't know what was going on, looked at us.

"Wait. What are you going to do? I haven't heard anything."

I should have told Noelle about this, but I was hesitant because of this method.

"Actually — I'm thinking of imitating Loic."

"Ha?"

Next to the surprised Noelle who was having trouble reacting, Ange crossed her arms, looked at me, and muttered.

"You should get bitter experience for once."

“Is this really okay!?”

I called Nix into the waiting room and explained my plan to make the matchmaking fail.

I smile and give a dog collar with a chain to Nix.

“It’s okay. I’ve seen the most shocking confessions in the Republic. Holding a collar and saying you’re mine will make you out in one step. The other party would refuse to go on the matchmaking.”

The model for this operation was Loic, who kept wooing Noelle in the Republic.

Loic, the target of that second otome game, not knowing what was happened to him, was approaching Noelle with a collar.

He was a man who made me surprised, but in the end, he had changed and become Marie’s little brother.

—Even if he changed, and became Marie’s little brother, what a terrible thing.

Is Marie emitting some kind of signal that attracts the men she’s trying to capture and makes them weird?

Nix gripped the collar with both hands and broke out in a cold sweat.

“It’s just too much. It’s wrong for a person to do such a thing, and it’ll ruin my reputation and our house, right?”

That’s the problem.

Holding a collar and saying, “You belong to me！”, Nix and Bartfalt family would be questioned about their common sense.

But! — It was the Roseblade family who was rude first.

Luxion has left a solid video of the matchmaking, so when the time comes, I can complain back.

If Dorothea-san was a normal person, my conscience would have been guilty, but as a younger brother, I would have been angry if she had mistreated my big brother that much.

Let's get some payback, and this time, they're the ones who are going to get a bitter experience.

"No problem. Ange told me that the other party has a big problem with the attitude."

"Really? I've seen an advanced class tea party at the academy and it was just like this."

— People like Dorothea-san at the tea party are classified as rather decent girls.

That's how bad the environment was, but getting used to it is a scary thing.

"I think so, too. I've been to a lot of tea parties that were worse than this."

"I understand you're having a hard time, but this is just awful. I'd question a person's humanity if they came at me with this."

I will ask Nix to take such action now.

"So you're just going to marry Dorothea-san? It's not just a loveless marriage. Are you going to live the rest of your life being disrespected?"

"T-That's not what I want."

After meeting with Dorothea-san, Nix seemed to have guessed that they would not be able to be a harmonious couple like Dad and Mom in the future.

So, for *aniki*'s sake, I'm going to make this matchmaking fail.

That's what the collar is for.

"*Aniki*, if you use this, you're sure to fail. The other party will tell you they don't want this kind of matchmaking."

"I know they will to say it, but my damage is too great, though?"

"You'll have to accept that"

Nix looks at me and the collar alternately, his cheeks drawn together.

"I guess it's easier to just tell people what to do."

"As your brother, I feel so bad for making you do this, *aniki*!"

"Lie!"

When Dorothea returned to the room where she had run out, Nix was not there.

There was still some tea on the table, which had cooled down.

Dorothea had returned, and the servants of the Bartfalt family were making a fresh pot of tea.

"The standard is that degree."

From the start, Dorothea had no expectations of a countryside baron family, but the atmosphere of the mansion and the attitude of the servants did not seem noble to her.

When the object of comparison is her own family, the Count, it is no wonder that the other families are inferior.

Even though she understands it, she can't help but see it all as a mess.

(If I refuse this offer, *otou-sama* will probably give up on me, too.)

Dorothea is also aware that her father, the head of the Count's family, has a soft spot for his daughter.

However, if this talk ends in failure, the father who is lenient to his daughter will change his attitude.

Even Dorothea, who had given him so much trouble, understood that much.

(Life is so boring, isn't it)

Taking a sip of her tea, Dorothea then crossed her arms under her chest and waited

for Nix.

When the waiting time becomes longer, she crosses her legs.

(It looks like I've made him angry)

She thought that she had angered Nix and that the talk had failed.

Then the door was opened with a bang.

"*Ara*, have you come to complain?"

Dorothea's mocking expression was directed at Nix, whose face was somewhat tense.

He didn't seem to be in a good mood, as he had been earlier.

Dorothea judged this to be Nix's anger, but there was something wrong with him.

Nix seems to be very nervous.

"—Why don't you sit down?"

When she was suspicious of Nix not taking his seat, he seemed to be hiding something with his hands behind his back.

For a moment, she thought he might be hiding a weapon. But it was the Bartofalt family who would be in trouble if he harmed her here.

He doesn't seem like a short-tempered person.

After some thought, a wary Dorothea prepared herself to run away at any moment and Nix placed the hidden object on the table.

Dorothea was confused when she saw the object placed in front of her with a clattering metallic sound.

"Wha?"

Her voice didn't come out because of the suddenness of the situation.

In front of her was a collar with a chain, like a dog would have.

She immediately looked at Nix's face and saw a drawn out smile on his face.

"I've got a collar that might suit you. You asked me to be your pet, didn't you? I'll give you my answer. You will be my pet!"

After being told in a loud voice to be a pet, Dorothea found herself trembling before she knew it.

She grabs her two arms to hug herself, stands up, and runs out of the room again without seeing Nix.

At Dorothea's back, Nix laughs and makes a nasty remark.

"Are you running away? You tried to treat people like a pet, but you're such a small-minded master!"

When Dorothea heard those words, she felt her body heat up all at once.

Even without looking in the mirror, she could predict that she would be red in the face now.

When she ran out of the room, Deirdre, who had been keeping an eye on her, was sitting in the chair provided.

When she sees Dorothea, she thinks for a moment that she's run away again, and make a displeased face -- But, she notices that something is wrong and gets up and runs over to her.

"What's wrong, *onee-sama*?"

Dorothea turns her moist eyes to Deirdre, who hugs her shoulder.

Deirdre was surprised by her weak appearance.

"What really happened?"

"Deirdre, I—"

“You did it, *aniki!*”

As soon as Dorothea-san ran out of the room, I entered the room through a different door.

Nix's great performance made me laugh, but judging from Dorothea-san's behavior, I have a feeling that the plan will be a great success.

After all, she was red-faced and furious.

Nix's was red up to his ears, hiding his face with his hands.

“I don't want it anymore. Why did I do this—I never thought I'd treat someone like a pet”

“It's an act, right? You're worrying too much.”

“She thinks I'm serious! Leon, are you sure that this is okay? I agreed with you, but now I'm starting to get somewhat scared.”

By now, Nix was terrified that he had angered the other party.

But I don't like to cross any dangerous bridges.

I at least have insurance in case I fail.

“Don't worry. If there's a problem, I'll apologize to Deirdre-senpai later.”

“How does an apology help?”

“No problem. That's what money is for. Luxion will take care of it!”

I looked over to my right shoulder and saw Luxion floating there, looking at me with one red eye.

[It's always my job to follow up. If money was the answer to this problem, why didn't you just pay some money and refuse from the beginning?]

"Wouldn't it be a waste of money if we paid from the start?"

[You're still strangely stingy.]

It would be a problem in many ways to be offered a matchmaking and then suddenly pay for it and pretend it never happened.

Luxion turned his red lens on Nix.

[Please be assured. Even if the Roseblade family uses force, I will protect you and the Bartfalt family.]

Nix's shoulders slumped in response to Luxion's very reliable words.

"I want you to do something before that happens. I want this to end peacefully before they use force."

When I see Nix worrying, I think we're really brothers. After all, I'm a worrywart too.

"It's okay. I'll rely on Ange in case of emergency."

I am grateful that my fiancée is reliable.

But when he raised his head, Nix was looking at me with a surprised expression.

"You —— Aren't you embarrassed that you've been relying on others so much?"

Nix blamed me for this, but I don't get it.

"Don't you think it's arrogant to try to do everything by yourself? Relying on someone who can do it for you is the right thing to do."

Nix put his finger on his forehead and was troubled by my words.

"That's true. But it seems to me that you've been stirring things up and then leaving it to others to clean up the mess, though?"

—— He hit where it hurts.

But it's also a kind of power to have someone you can rely on.

“You know, the right person in the right place “

“It looks to me like you’re just doing what you want to do and letting others clean up after you. You’re really selfish.”

“*Aniki* is too serious. Thanks to me, the matchmaking failed. Don’t you think you should praise me more?”

“If it hadn’t been for the damage to my reputation and psyche, I could have given you an honest compliment. Now I’m regretting taking the easy way out and letting you help me. She was more shocked than I thought she would be, and I feel bad for her.”

What are you talking about now? As I was thinking this, Luxion comforted Nix.

[You made a mistake with the person you joined hands with. Like you, I am usually made to regret by Master. Master who teaches regret to an AI may be a great man in a sense, though.]

Why does this guy insult me as he breathes out his words?

“I’m glad you’re learning to feel like a human.”

[Don’t you think you should do a little self-reflection? Your lack of empathy for others is also a problem.]

“Some sacrifices must be made in order to achieve a goal.”

[It wasn’t Master who made the sacrifice, though.]

Nix looked embarrassed as he remembered the scene from earlier.

“It’s true. I shouldn’t have relied on you.”

Nix has been embarrassed, but at the cost of his own reputation and psyche, this matchmaking will be a failure.

It took a lot of sacrifices, but the results were worth it.

The rest is fine as long as the post-processing is correct.

After Leon left for Nix's room, Ange and the others, three of them who were waiting in another room were talking about the future.

Noelle, her cheeks tightening, seemed to remember the time when Loic had hounded her.

"It looked bad when I was a part of it, but now that I see it, it's even worse. Isn't this going to ruin Nix-san's reputation?"

It ended so badly that Noelle was worried about Nix.

Livia asked Noelle a slightly nasty question.

"Noelle-san, you and Leon-san were connected for a while, weren't you? But you seemed to be happy then, didn't you?"

"T-That is!?"

Noelle's face turns red and she tries to deny it, but she has no excuse and her mouth agape.

She must have remembered the cursed collar placed on her by Loic when Ange and Livia visited the Republic.



It seems that Livia is still holding on to the fact that the way she was playing with Leon using that collar looked like she was flirting with him.

Ange rebuke Livia.

“Don’t be too mean to her.”

“I’m sorry”

Livia is remorseful and apologizes to Noelle, “I’m sorry.”

Noelle was troubled, but accepted the apology, and the conversation ended without dragging on, and they moved on.

Livia was concerned about the response of the Roseblade family and looked worried.

“Nix-san has his own problems, but I’m also worried about Dorothea-san, his partner. I’m sure she’ll report it to her parents since we made her angry.”

The relationship between the Bartfalt and Roseblade families would quickly turn sour — or so they predicted.

Livia turns to face Ange.

“Ange, are you sure we shouldn’t have stopped him? The usual Ange would have stopped Leon, right?”

Leon is a man who usually talks like a man of common sense and takes everything in stride, but once he shows his determination, he tends to go overboard.

It seemed to bother Livia that Ange, who was worried about Leon, didn’t stop him from going off the rails this time.

Ange smiled and began to talk about the underlying problem.

“No problem. Besides, Leon should be hurt while he can get it back. And did I mention that Deirdre came to me once to ask for matchmaking?”

Noelle looked up a little and spoke reminiscently while Livia was thinking.

“Eh? This is matchmaking, right? Because, Yumeria-san —— Are?”

Both Noelle and Livia will understand only when they get here.

The Bartfalt family and Yumeria assumed it was matchmaking, but not once did Deirdre mention that it was matchmaking between Nix and Dorothea.

Ange let out a small sigh and shrugged her shoulders.

“Because formal matchmaking is also a lot of trouble. The higher the rank, the more troublesome the procedures are. There’s no way they’re going to ignore that and go for matchmaking. Even if they did, the Roseblade family would probably remove obstacles in the way of their objective more carefully.”

Noelle leans forward a little and asks Ange about the reaction of the Bartfalt family.

“But Leon and the rest of the family believed it was a matchmaking match, didn’t they?”

With a troubled look on her face, Ange talked about the problems of the Bartofalt family.

“That’s the problem. For better or worse, the Bartfalt family is a countryside Baron family far from the capital. They are not familiar with the ways of the capital. That’s the reason why they misunderstood. This would have been fine in the past, but Leon has risen too high.”

With a sad look in her eyes, Ange felt bad that the Bartfalt family was also involved in Leon’s rise to power.

The Baron family, who used to be peaceful in the countryside, is now in a position to get involved in court disputes.

“Things are not going to go on as usual for Leon and his family. The fact that the Roseblade family has approached us is proof of that.”

Noelle was the first one to get depressed when she heard that.

Noelle was brought from the Republic of Arzel because she is the keeper of the sapling of the Sacred Tree that generates energy —— a priestess.

She is in a position to manage a tremendous plant that in the future will have no problem with energy.

Leon was the one who protected Noelle.

Noelle seemed to think that she was forcing Leon to participate in a power struggle that he didn't want to be involved in.

"Is it my fault? Because I am protected by Leon."

Noelle, who can control the saplings of the sacred tree that those in power would definitely want to acquire, would be taken away to some other country if she were to be released poorly.

Since Leon was the one who was protecting her, she thought she was causing trouble.

However, Ange immediately denied the idea.

"Unfortunately, even before he met Noelle, Leon was destined to be involved in a court battle. Because he was with me."

(In the first place, my father approved my engagement in order to incorporate him into his faction)

Once you have a Duke's daughter as your fiancée, you will be part of the power struggle even if you don't want to be.

Ange's father, Vince, a Duke, has a soft spot for his daughter, but that alone is not enough to make him the head of a large noble family.

Of course, he allowed his daughter to become engaged to Leon, expecting his power.

It is true that there was a kindness to his daughter, but it was unusual for him to marry the Duke's daughter to Viscount Leon, who had risen through the ranks in his own lifetime.

He has feelings for his daughter, but he also has his own interests at heart.

"And by the way, the only person who's getting more attention than Noelle at the moment is Leon himself."

Noelle was a little confused by Ange's explanation.

As Ange was about to continue, there was a strong knocking sound in the room.

The knocking sound was loud, and the three of them felt as if the person on the other side of the door was getting impatient.

"You can come in"

When Ange allowed her to enter the room, Yumeria hurriedly rushed in.

"I-It's serious! The nobleman's airship has arrived at the port again!"

From how flustered Yumeria was, Ange guessed that it wasn't the nobles she was usually associated with — but a big name like the Roseblade family.

"This is getting complicated. So which house is it?"

Yumeria took out the paper she had written down and said the name of the person's house.

"It's Atley's house."

When the name of the house was given in a light-hearted manner, as if it were someone from the next door, Ange's expression disappeared.

"—Clarisa, huh?"

The person she predicted was [Clarisa Fia Atley].

She is the daughter of Minister Bernard, who does not hold territory as a court noble, but holds a minister position in the royal capital.

Like Deirdre, she was a young lady from great noble.

CHAPTER 3

UNEXPECTED

For some reason, the place where Nix and Dorothea-san had just been having matchmaking was enveloped in a strange atmosphere.

I sat down and drank a cup of tea, but for some reason, the aroma and taste seemed lighter than usual.

Winter is over and it's almost time for warmer seasons, but for some reason, it's strangely chilly.

I sipped my tea silently in a room filled with nervousness and tension.

However, the woman in front of me —— Claris-senpai, who graduated from school, smiles happily.

“I’m relieved. If that’s the case, then it wasn’t matchmaking between Leon-kun and Deirdre-senpai.”

“I have a fiancé, so I don’t think I’ll be having matchmaking or anything.”

For some reason, Claris-senpai misunderstood that me and Deirdre-senpai were having matchmaking.

When she came to Bartfalt territory by airship, she came straight to the mansion.

She was accompanied by a senior student who had previously been with me in an air bike race and an unknown person who appeared to be a female student from the school.

Deirdre-senpai, who was sitting next to me making a good argument, was hiding her mouth and giving Claris-senpai a displeased look.

“The court nobles are good at being sarcastic, aren’t they? Do you really think the Roseblade family would do such a thing?”

It seemed she think she forced me to do the matchmaking with her, and Deirdre-senpai was angry.

Claris-senpai countered calmly.

"Isn't the problem in the first place to make people think it's not surprising that you do it? You should reflect on your usual behavior."

The sisters say they want to make people into their pets, so I guess she's trying to say that it's not strange for them to bring up matchmaking to someone who has a fiance.

Deirdre-senpai said back, raising one corner of her mouth to keep a smile on her face.

Inwardly, she felt as if her gut was churning.

The servants of the Roseblade family behind me, for example, have been staring at me with narrowed eyes for a while now.

"That doesn't sound like the words of a desperate person who had her engagement broken off."

If there is a weak point in Claris-senpai, it's Jilk — that Jilk broke off the engagement with her and then she became a delinquent during the summer.

In the meantime, she had a lot of fun, and it was said that she behaved in an unladylike manner.

The gazes of the two people behind Claris-senpai had become much more stern.

I turned around only my upper body and asked for help from our servants.

However, the servants quickly averted their gaze.



People like Yumelia-san looked carefree, not understanding what was going on.

When I turned back, it seemed she decided to wave her hand for the time being.

As I was being soothed by such a sight, Ange opened her mouth after taking a sip of tea.

“Take your staring contest elsewhere. Now, what business does Claris have with us?”

I was relieved to find Ange in charge of the place, and Luxion muttered beside me.

[Master, aren’t you relieved that Angelica is in charge?]

“It’s my style to leave things to those who can.”

[You really are a useless master, aren’t you.]

“I’m just not stupid enough to jump into a situation I don’t understand.”

I don’t know why they are being so unfriendly in the first place.

[You just don’t want to know, do you?]

“Don’t you think it’s a bit arrogant to expect humans to know everything?”

[It would be arrogant of me to think that I could live without knowing anything.]

As I was whispering with Luxion, Claris-senpai took a sip of her drink, took a breath, and started talking.

“Actually, we have a lot to discuss. Why don’t we talk by ourselves?”

By “by ourselves,” she meant that she wanted to talk to us without any servants.

When Ange turned her gaze to Deirdre-senpai, she opened her fan to cover her mouth and directed her gaze somewhere else.

“I don’t mind. I also have a lot to talk about.”

She glanced at me as she did so, so she must have been displeased with Nix’s behavior

toward Dorothea-san.

I should probably tell her that Nix didn't really mean it, but that it was my instruction.

This is how we got the servants to leave their seats.

“Somehow I can't stand it. Well, it was my parents who arranged the meeting. But as for me, it's hard to shrug. Even though I'm alone, everyone around me is so intimate, it's hard.”

When the servants were gone, Claris-senpai looked down with a gloomy expression on her face.

The reason was the two people who had just been waiting behind her.

Although he was a graduate, he was introduced to one woman by the Atley family.

I whispered to Livia next to me.

“Senpai is the one who competed with me in the air bike race, right? Didn't that manly man like Claris-senpai?”

It seemed that Livia thought so too.

“That's right. I'm sure he has complicated feelings.”

After graduating from the school, the senior, who was active in air bike racing, was involved in work that involved the use of air bikes.

He seemed to be a very reliable person, and he came to our house today as an escort for Claris-senpai.

He was the one who previously tried to take revenge on Jilk for Claris-senpai.

From the previous situation, I could tell that he still cared for Claris-senpai as much as ever.

Noelle listens to us and gives us a complicated look.

“The nobles of the kingdom have it hard, too.”

As the three of us were whispering to each other, Claris-senpai turned to face us.

“You don’t have to worry about it.”

Apparently, she heard us.

As I try to avert my gaze and cover it up, Luxion asks straight out without reading the air.

[There must have been men who had already graduated from the school who longed for Claris. Wasn’t there an approach from them?]

Since Claris was well-liked by the boys around her, I thought at least one of them might have confessed to her.

However, it seems that the situation is different.

Claris replied with a wry smile.

“T-There’s a difference in status.”

The people around her were boys from regular class.

They are too different in status to match up with Claris-senpai to be a suitable marriage partner.

Deirdre opened her fan to cover her mouth, but I could tell from her eyes that she was enjoying it.

“I wonder if it was respect instead of love? You’re worried about being left alone while everyone else is getting married. Isn’t that the result of unladylike behavior?”

Having Jilk break off their engagement, and the past of playing around at night, weighed heavily on Claris-senpai.

Aside from the barons and viscounts, the Kingdom of Horfalt had a strong sense of chastity for some reason when it came to the families of the counts and above.

The reason for this was very unfortunate, but Claris-senpai is avoided by men from families who could be her marriage partner, saying, "A girl who has been playing around is a bit".

Perhaps she is aware of it, she glares at Deirdre-senpai.

"Yes! Everyone around me is getting married, and I'm just alone! And yet, everyone around me is so nice to me that it makes me even more miserable!"

Ange crossed her arms in front of Claris, who was depressed, hiding her face with both hands.

"So you're here to complain? How about you tell me what you really mean?"

However, Ange was still wary of what Claris-senpai had to say.

When I was wondering why, Claris-senpai straightened her posture and showed me a smile.

The depressed figure I had seen earlier was nowhere to be seen.

Noelle and Livia were surprised to see such Claris-senpai.

"Isn't that person a little scary?"

"She's usually a gentle senior. She's a graduate now, though."

Ange, who had looked over at Claris-senpai and Deirdre-senpai, responded with a fearless smile.

And I guessed the reason why Claris-senpai had come to our house.

"The Roseblade family is getting close to the Bartfalt family, so you came all the way out here to check them out, didn't you? Because you and Leon are not strangers to each other."

I didn't think the Atley family would bother to make a move for our house matchmaking.

But if Ange says so, there must be a reason.

For some reason, Claris-senpai looked at me and smiled.

"That's one of the reasons. But if the other person is that Dorothea, it will fail anyway, or has it already failed?"

When I moved my shoulders to show my reaction, Claris-senpai let out a sigh of relief and looked relieved.

"Judging by Leon-kun's reaction, it looks like it failed. That's a relief."

And Claris-senpai, who reaches for the cup, is about to take a sip of the tea when Deirdre-senpai tells her.

"Ara? When did the Roseblade family fail? Onee-sama is more serious than ever."

"Haa!?"

Claris-senpai swallowed her tea, trying to resist the urge to burst out, holding her chest, and she looked at Deirdre-senpai.

"Y-You're kidding, right? That Dorothea's on board?"

When Deirdre-senpai slowly gets up from her seat, she closes her fan and turns to Claris-senpai and declares.

"Even from me, her sister's point of view, I can assure you that she is serious about this. The Roseblade family is serious about getting Nix-dono."

Stunned, Claris-senpai apparently thought that the matchmaking would fail.

But what does this mean?

Noelle pinched my clothes with her fingers and tugged on them just a few times.

"What does that mean? Isn't it supposed to be a fail?"

"I-I don't even know what happens here"

After all the horrible things we've put her through, what does it mean that Dorothea-san's on board?

Luxion says to us who are confused.

[This result was also unexpected even for me. Master has always betrayed my expectations in the past, but this time, the result was diagonally downward. Unfortunately, we seem to have drawn a ridiculously low success rate.]

As a result of the diagonal downward thrust — it appears that Nix has won Dorothea-san's heart.

“It’s a lie, right. How could we succeed that way?”

What excuse am I going to give Nix?

“Why do we succeed?”

When I was released from the tense tea party, I passed on the message from Dorothea-san to Nix.

As a result, Nix is holding his head.

I was also holding my head.

“I don’t know, too?! If you tell someone to be your pet with a collar, no matter how much you think about it, you usually deserve to fail! And yet, the other party — “

Dorothea-san’s message was “I want to see you again.”

I was entrusted with not only a message but also a very polite and long letter.

It was politely accompanied by a gift.

In addition, it also contained an apology for her rudeness in that situation.

It’s like she’s a different person than she was on matchmaking.

By the way, I heard from Deirdre-senpai that Dorothea-san — was like a maiden in love.

Nix closes in on me, grabbing me by both shoulders and rocking me back and forth repeatedly.

“You said it! You told me that I was an expert in failure! Why did this succeed!”

Instead of me who is being shaken and wobbly, Luxion answers in an amused electronic voice.

[If the premise must not succeed, then it has failed spectacularly. That's a Master-like result. It's an amazing result if you've achieved a success that I, with my lack of information, could not have led. You have succeeded in a situation where you almost failed.]

If we wanted to succeed, it would have been very difficult even for Luxion.

It seems that I who succeeded in that situation is amazing.

It seems like a compliment, but I don't feel like I'm being complimented.

I pushed Nix away from me and took my distance, adjusting my breathing as I did with my messy hair and clothes.

“Become a pet! There is no way you think that's the right answer, right! Aniki also agreed with my opinion!”

“That's true, but! I've sacrificed so much and worked so hard, but why the answer you chose is correct one! That's a big mistake for me!”

I thought about it for a while —— and came to a conclusion.

“Why don't you just give up?”

The answer I gave him made Nix look more and more like a demon.

He jumped on me and we started the first sibling fight in a long time.

“You got it good! You're so lucky to have such a beautiful woman with such a good personality! And yet, why am I —— Damn iiiit!”



For some reason, Luxion seemed to be happy to see me get blown away by Nix's right fist in the cheek, is it my imagination?

The Roseblade family airship.

Dorothea was walking around in her room restlessly.

"Oh no, I should have brought better clothes for this. Besides, I wasn't too particular about my hair when we first met—Doesn't Nix-sama hate me?"

Deirdre was puzzled to see Dorothea, who had never been interested in anything, now worrying about small things.

"I think there is no problem. In the first place, didn't onee-sama say that you didn't understand women who cared about clothes?"

Dorothea was the one who made fun of the women who usually dressed up, saying that it was enough to be clean and somewhat neat in appearance.

And yet, now she was the very image that she hated.

Dorothea hugs Deirdre.

"Deirdre, did you deliver the letter and the gift properly? Are you sure you didn't get a message from Nix-sama? P-Perhaps he hates me and won't reply?"

"Wouldn't you like an answer right away? In the first place, why don't you just get off the ship and tell him directly?"

"N-No! —What if he thinks I'm a nasty woman?"

The servants around her were holding their hands and swallowing their words, "You say that!"

Deirdre was patient, and after a short pause, she continued her talk.

"I never thought that onee-sama's ideal man would be in such a place."

Dorothea folded her hands in a prayerful gesture and thanked the saint.

Saint — a woman who is said to have been closest to the god worshipped in the temple.

She is the sixth adventurer who is said to have been involved in the founding of the Kingdom of Horfalt, and has long been adored by the people as a saint.

In the Kingdom of Horfalt, founded by adventurers, she is now a goddess.

Since the saint was an adventurer, it is also popular among the nobility for having the blessing of adventure.

“Thank you, Saint. If I keep wishing, my dreams will come true. I never thought I’d finally meet a wonderful man. Why didn’t I meet him while I was still in school? If I had met Nix-sama, my school life would have been much more enjoyable.”

Seeing Dorothea’s cheeks dyed red, Deirdre muttered a sigh.

“It’s a relief to know that onee-sama is serious.”

“That was not matchmaking?”

Nix had beaten me up, and I was in my room being treated by Livia with healing magic.

The pain from where I was hit is still there, but it’s a lot better than if I hadn’t done anything.

The area that had turned purple had also recovered to the point where it was now only slightly red and swollen.

While watching me, Ange, who looks stunned in her chair, points out our misunderstanding.

“Yes. The Roseblade family has not officially applied for matchmaking.”

“But Dad and others!”

"If you want to apply formally, you have to go through a more complicated procedure. In this case, it's really just a face-to-face meeting. If they get along, maybe next time."

"Deirdre-senpai and the others were serious!"

"The other side must have been serious. If the chemistry was right, they would have made formal matchmaking or even an engagement."

-- EEEEEEH.

Did I, and even my family, mistakenly believe that we were being offered matchmaking?

Glaring at Luxion.

"Did you not even notice?"

[I could have predicted it, but since Master was working on the premise of matchmaking, there was nothing I could do. Also, I was not ordered to gather information on the noble society. I didn't have enough information to make a judgment, and I couldn't be sure.]

He thought it was suspicious, but didn't point it out because I didn't suspect it.

"You're not as useful as I thought."

[No matter how good the artificial intelligence is, if there is a problem with the person handling it, it will not be able to show its full potential. It's not a problem with my performance, but with Master's lack of ability to use it. I demand improvement.]

He makes an appeal that he is not at fault.

"Why don't you improve on that character of yours?"

[I'll take that into consideration]

I stood up to grab Luxion, but Livia grabbed my arm.

"The treatment is not over yet."

"It doesn't hurt anymore, so it's okay. More importantly, I need to sanction this traitor."

“Leon-san, don’t! Don’t move until the treatment is finished.”

After Livia scolded me, I reluctantly sat down and she resumed my treatment, and Luxion approached me in a showy manner.

He came just barely out of my reach and went out of his way to agitate me.

[I’ll summarize the results. In other words, Master has encouraged your brother’s matchmaking to fail by doing something unnecessary. Not only his partner, but even you have made a mistake by letting your brother do something terrible. Do you feel a little remorse?]

“It’s not over yet. I’m sure we can turn things around from here.”

I haven’t given up yet.

When Luxion shook his one eye, saying *yareyare* and left the room, Ange followed.

Me and Livia are left alone in the room.

As Livia treated my injuries, she remembered the days when she had just entered the academy.

Seeing my injuries heal, her cheek relaxes a little and she puts on a gentle face.

“This treatment reminds me of when we were first-year students. Do you remember when I first started working with Leon-san and we took on the dungeon for the first time?”

Back then, while I was looking for marriage, I took care of a lot of things because I was concerned about Livia’s situation.

Believing it to be the right thing to do, I even helped with unnecessary things that hindered Livia’s growth.

She was supposed to grow up to be a strong girl, but I still regret that I made her mentally fragile.

However, afterward, Livia showed that she had grown strong on her own.

I'm sure that Livia would have solved the problem on her own even if I hadn't been there.

It's the exact opposite of me, who can't do anything without Luxion.

"I remember. I was careless and a monster attacked me and I got hurt. Shortly before that, I invited Livia to a tea party, and we started talking a lot."

When I saw her being bullied, I couldn't leave her alone, so I called out to her.

Thinking back now, I think that was a big turning point.

If I hadn't called out to her there, we wouldn't have been in this situation.

--I don't regret it, but I think I did something irreparable.

Livia remembers those days and looks happy.

"I was invited to tea parties many times. The day before the tea party, I was so excited that I couldn't sleep."

"Is that so?"

I hadn't expected her to react like a child who can't sleep the day before a field trip just by attending my tea party.

"For me, it was very special to be invited to a tea party. Then things happened, and I became friends with Ange."

The part where Livia summarized a lot of things would be the mess with Julius and the other, the five idiots.

Perhaps not wanting to talk about it, she ended it with a single word.

Even Livia's reaction to the five idiots is cold.

Originally, those guys and Livia could have been lovers.

"Before everything happened, you weren't close with Ange."

"That's right. Ange is a princess, and I never thought we'd get along like this."

"Certainly not someone we could get close to."

Livia grasps my right hand from above and below with both hands and then looks up at me.

"It's the same with you, Leon-san. Back then, I never imagined we could be like this."

I never thought I would be engaged to Livia, and I never imagined that I would be engaged to two — no, three people.

In the beginning, I was thinking of keeping a subtle distance while maintaining a close relationship with her because she was the protagonist of that otome game.

Someone was going to make Livia happy, and I had no doubt that it was the right thing to do.

Looking back now, what was I doing?

Those five idiots are gonna make Livia happy? Not possible.

The five of them were beautiful and talented characters in the game, but their current figures are so disappointing that I can't even look at them.

Even Livia has strongly rejected the five idiots, saying, "Not with those five".

"I didn't see it coming, either. I was supposed to be a baron back then — but now I'm a marquis, what a mistake. If I told that to myself a few years ago, I never would have believed it."

If I were to be told by myself from the future, "You will be a marquis in the future and have three wives!", I would think it was a joke.

There are so many things that happen — For some reason, four of the captured targets are now my subordinates.

In addition, the prince also came along, and it was far from unexpected that I had to take care of these idiots.

Livia rests her forehead on my shoulder.

When I felt the gentle scent and was nervous, she happily told me how she felt.

"I can't believe it either. I still think maybe this is a dream. For me, Leon-san was a strong and gentle knight."

"A gentle knight? You're not wrong, but I'm a little more cowardly than most."

I am aware that I have a tendency to use any means necessary.

But that's because I'm aware that I'm an ordinary person.

Therefore, it is only natural that I must be prepared to win.

"*Etto* —— I can't judge whether it's a little or not."

Livia, who sounded troubled, looked up and gave me a big smile.

"To me, Leon-san is still a kind and strong knight."

For some reason, I wanted to hug her and reached out to touch Livia's shoulder, but my body stopped moving, wondering for a moment if I should really touch her.

Then, Livia leaned in closer to me.

However, Livia looked a little sad.

"So, take a rest now. Leon-san is trying too hard in many ways."

"I think you're being too worried. But if Livia told me that, I'd just quietly obey."

"Is it true? Are you forcing yourself?"

"I'm not going to lie to you"

If Luxion were here, he would say, [*Oya?* Are you lying right away?] But here is Livia.

Hearing my joking reply, Livia giggled.

“I’m not going to lie, huh? I’ll trust you now. But if you’re lying, I’ll tie you up to make sure you get some rest.”

— I’m a little horrified, but you’re thinking of me, right?

Luxion left the room and went out into the hallway to wait for Ange.

Ange stopped when she saw Luxion.

“Do you have a question?”

[Yes. Angelica seemed to be aware of the Roseblade family’s intentions. So why didn’t you correct Master’s misunderstanding?]

“That’s right — “

Angel realized that it was just a face-to-face meeting, but of course, the Roseblade family had other intentions.

She realized this but didn’t tell Leon anything about it.

” — It was a good opportunity. For some reason, Leon has low self-esteem. No, it’s too low. I was just waiting for him to realize his own self-worth at this point.”

[May the Roseblade family marry Master’s brother?]

“Even you must know that. — Leon was too active.”

He saved the Kingdom of Horfalt from a crisis and even defeated the Republic of Arzel, which was said to be undefeated in their defense.

He may be called a hero, but that doesn’t mean everyone will be happy about it.

Naturally, there were people who wanted to get in the way, but there were also people who wanted to get close to Leon and take advantage of him.

“From now on, all kinds of people will try to get involved, even if they don’t want to. I don’t mind being vigilant, but I don’t want him to be unaware of it. — However, the

collar thing was too much. I thought that once he screwed up and got bitter experience, he would reflect on it."

Ange was puzzled, too, as she hadn't expected him to have succeeded.

Luxion warned Ange.

[I will not tolerate you if you do something to the detriment of the Master.]

Ange smiles at Luxon's line.

"You are fine like that. Besides, if you were aware of it, why didn't you tell Leon about it?"

Wouldn't Luxion have noticed?

Ange's guess was correct.

However, Luxion did not answer clearly.

[Master needs rest]

"I agree with you, but you could have at least told him during his rest, right?"

[To reduce the extra burden]

Hearing that, Angel moved closer to Luxion and touched him in a caressing way.

"What is it?"

"You like Leon, too, don't you."

[It's Angelica's misunderstanding. Protecting the person who has registered as a Master is just one of my important duties. I don't have any feelings of likes or dislikes as humans do.]

"You usually say you hate him, though"

Luxion, thinking that Ange was teasing him, emitted a somewhat sulking electronic voice.

[I'm just trying to match Master. Now if you'll excuse me. Also, it seems that Angelica needs to rest. Your judgment is deteriorating.]

As Luxion quickly flies away, Ange calls out to him one last time.

“Leon’s right, you know. You’re not being honest.”

When I finished treating my injuries and went outside, it was already evening.

“It’s been an intense day.”

There was a lot going on, starting with Nix’s matchmaking, and even Claris-senpai came over to join the tense tea party for some reason.

I let out a sigh, worrying about what will happen tomorrow, and then I hear some talking.

“Today’s *ojou-sama* was also cool.”

“She is dignified. I wish I could be like that.”

I was curious about their happy conversation, so I went to take a peek, and there they were, a graduated *senpai* who I met on an air bike race, and a girl student.

The girl was younger than me, maybe a junior at school?

When I show my face, *senpai* notices and raises his hand.

“Yo! No, you’re already a Marquis. Pardon me, Marquis.”

I hurriedly urge *senpai* and the girl to raise their heads as they bow to me.

“I’m not used to being so formal. Anyway, what were you talking about?”

When *senpai* and the female student raise their heads, they look at each other and then at me.

Senpai scratches his head and tells me with embarrassment.

“It’s about Lady Claris”

“Clarissenpai?”

The female student was also embarrassed and twined her own arm around *senpai*’s arm.

“Actually, we met through the Atley family. We got to know each other through an introduction by the Atley family, and we hit it off when we talked about Lady Claris. I’ve only recently been able to help in many ways, so isn’t Lady Claris wonderful!”

When I replied to the sparkling junior with a troubled, “U-Un,” *senpai* snorted and leaned forward to make an impassioned speech.

“That’s right! That person has been taking good care of me since I was a student, and she was also very kind. When I graduated from school, she even took care of matchmaking for me. Then she introduced me to a nice girl who admired a young lady. The topic of Lady Claris naturally came up in our daily conversation. The others seem to be the same way, though.”

“I-Is that so?”

I knew inwardly that Claris-senpai’s complaints were not all lies.

The boys around her are getting married one by one, but the one who comes up for the talk with the other party is Claris-senpai herself.

The people around her are getting excited, but it seems that the person in question doesn’t have any plans to get married.

I can’t help but feel a bit bewildered.

So I ask what’s on my mind.

“Are? By the way, you all like Claris-senpai, don’t you? Didn’t someone confess to her or something?”

Both *senpai* and the junior girl looked dubious at my question.

Then they both looked at each other and nodded their heads.

"No, I understand that there is a status difference. But still, you like her or that kind of feeling you have or something."

Listening to my explanation, *senpai* shakes his head.

"We? We awe her. That person is not someone to whom we can direct such impure feelings. As long as Lady Claris is happy, that's all that matters to us."

The junior girl also put her hands on her chest and nodded deeply.

"Yes, of course. Lady Claris is a goddess to us. When my family was in trouble, it was Lady Claris who reached out to us. She's kind but strong at the heart, and she behaves perfectly, which I admire."

A junior girl folded her hands and talked about her memories with Claris-senpai.

--What is this treatment?

It seems that Claris-senpai is too precious to be directed to impure emotions.

I think Claris-senpai will have a hard time with this.

There must have been one or two boys among the seniors who were close to her, who supported her, and whom she could tolerate.

But it would be a shock in a different way if such seniors started saying that "We awe you so we don't have impure feelings".

In my previous life, is it more than an idol? But an idol is essentially an idol, aren't you take her as a being to worship?

The two of them talk about how precious Claris-senpai is in front of me.

The junior girl came up to me.

"More than that, what did you think of Lady Clarice, Marquis? She took extra time to prepare for today. Did you compliment her like beautiful, lovely, or adorable?"

"N-No"

As I step back, *senpai* quickly closes the distance between us.

"That's no good! Please call out to her now. If the Marquis praises her, Lady Claris will be pleased. In order to meet the Marquis, Lady Claris was more enthusiastic than usual in her preparations today. She is really lovely!"

I was terrified when an athletic senior used honorifics and gave me a forceful lecture with bloodshot eyes.

I was totally freaked out.

"I-I will tell her later!"

As I leave this place as if to run away, I decide to tell Claris-senpai that she was beautiful today.

If I don't tell her, I'm going to be in a lot of trouble tomorrow because I'm intimidated by the two of them.

And as I walked away from the two of them, I felt sorry for Claris-senpai.

"Surely this makes you want to complain about it?"

What's terrible is that everyone around is praising Claris-senpai.

Even though she doesn't want it, they are probably talking about Claris-senpai more excitedly than necessary.

Moreover, they're all couples.

Even though she is alone, she gets angry when people around her are flirting and talking about her.

She wishes she could complain, but all around her were people who adored her.

"I'll at least keep her company when she's complaining"

I think I'll let her vent her frustrations at least while she's staying at my parents' house.

On the way to the room where Claris-senpai was staying, I saw my big sister and little sister there in their plain clothes.

Two people were facing each other in the hallway, arguing about something.

The older sister, Jenna, looked down at the shorter sister, Finley, pointing a finger at her.

“Just be quiet!”

“Why?! She’s just a customer, right?”

“You fool. The Roseblade family and the Atley family are the most prestigious families. If you embarrass yourself, you’ll ruin my reputation as well!”

Apparently, Jenna has been telling Finley to be quiet.

Finley, who had not even attended the school, still knew about the prestigious noble family but did not really feel it.

That attitude must have seemed to Jenna as if she was not feeling tense.

But I thought.

“Did you still have a reputation to lower?”

Jenna glared at me as I laughed and talked to her.

“So the rumor that you were even laying a hand on Claris-san is true.”

“Ha?”

I tilt my head at Jenna’s words, and Finley gives me a look of utter disgust.

“Haa?! You have two fiancées, and you cheat on them again? You’re the worst.”

Again? What do you mean again?

I’m not cheating!

"Let me correct a mistake. I've never cheated on anyone, and I have three fiancées to begin with."

I held up three fingers in front of them and said, "Don't mistake that part!" I emphasized strongly!

Jenna and Finley, who had been arguing earlier, huddled together and had a whispered discussion.

"Finley, you should be careful with men like this."

"What do those ladies see in this brother that makes them like him? He's the worst kind of scumbag. If it were me, I would never choose him. They have bad taste."

"You're right, they all have bad taste. I wonder if the ladies have seen so many beautiful men around that they find a face like Leon's unusual?"

"It's an extravagant worry. Normally, I would definitely choose a beautiful boy."

My sisters can say all they want, but I want to say it from me, too.

"Even boys don't choose you, ugly-minded girls, either. Besides, did anyone ever pick Jenna before you graduated?"

"Hmph!"

Before I could finish, Jenna took a big step and slammed her fist into my face.

Instead of slapping me, she slammed her fist into me.

"What happened to your face?"

In front of Claris-senpai's room.

Claris-senpai, who opened the door and faced me, was surprised to see the bruise on my face.

"Sometimes facts hurt people, don't they?"

I tried to explain to her that I had asked Jenna, “Did *onee-sama* get married before graduation?” When I think about it, this story is a minefield for Claris-senpai as well.

I’d like to give myself a compliment for having been so quick to cover it up.

— When I think about it, I’ve said too much to Jenna.

I’ll apologize later.

Somehow, I feel like I’ve been apologizing to my family a lot lately.

In my previous life and now, I’m troubling my family, aren’t I.

I’m saddened by the fact that I’ve lived longer than I look, but I haven’t grown up inside. — Well, people don’t grow up easily on the inside, though, no matter how old they get.

Claris-senpai touches my injury.

“It would be quicker to ask Olivia-san to treat you, right.”

It seemed that Claris-senpai had thought about patching me up, but she didn’t want to do it because of Livia’s presence.

“This will heal in no time.”

“Boys become pretentious right away. Anyway, what do you need?”

Claris-senpai, who had already changed her clothes and was dressed rather roughly, I smiled and complimented her on her appearance today.

“Today, Claris-senpai looked wonderful.”

” — Eh?”

“I heard you spent a lot of time on your hair and clothes. It was lovely. Well then, I’ll be taking my leave.”

When I waved my hand, Claris-senpai, who looked dazed, also gave me a small wave back.

Now, I won't have to worry about being complained about by the picky senpai tomorrow.

CHAPTER 4

COLLAR

The next day, the morning was filled with tension.

Dorothea-san blushed and looked down, while Nix's face was red up to his ears as if he was remembering what happened yesterday.

They were both too nervous to speak.

"It looks like a real matchmaking"

We were in another room observing the situation, and watching the images that Luxion was projecting on the wall.

However, the situation is different from the last time.

Deirdre-senpai was getting upset with Dorothea-san's attitude, which was different from yesterday.

"*Onee-sama*, what happened to your usual boldness? Last night you made me accompany you to practice the conversation!"

They had been practicing the conversation she would have with Nix late last night. About what topic? What kind of questions will she ask? Because of that, Deirdre-senpai seems to be a little sleep deprived, but she is so excited by her sister's pathetic appearance that drowsiness is blown away.

Next to her, Claris-senpai, who had been glaring at each other until yesterday, was watching them with a serious expression.

"If one of them doesn't make a move, nothing will get started here."

Dorothea-san is ashamed of being different from yesterday.

She looked like a maiden in love, but Nix looked nervous, afraid that someone of higher

rank would accuse him of being rude yesterday.

"*Aniki* is not going to make a move. I understand it as his brother. He's a pathetic big brother."

Yare-yare, when I shrugged my shoulders, Ange, Livia and even Noelle looked at me and gave me a surprised look.

They seemed to want to say something, but their current interest seemed to be the two of them not making a move. Livia looks like she's kind of happy.

"What's going to happen? I'm hoping they'll talk to each other."

In response to Livia's words, Ange expressed her thoughts with some excitement.

"One of them has to start talking to get things moving. Why don't one of us take the initiative and start the conversation? I'd be happy to do that?"

When Ange insists on getting in and forcing them to talk, Deirdre-senpai also decides to step in.

"Then I'm the right person for the job. We're sisters, and Nix-dono and I are schoolmates."

Claris-senpai seemed to be unconvinced in Dorothea-senpai's opinion. (*TLN: Maybe the author mistakenly written, it should be Deirdre*)

"You had different class, didn't you? Even if you were in the same grade, there was no connection. Then how about me, the unrelated one?"

For some reason, I feel that the ladies are more excited than yesterday.

Noelle was sitting in her wheelchair, staring at the screen.

"I can't take my eyes off of them for some reason."

I keep my distance from the women who are enjoying themselves and chat with Luxion, who has come along with me.

"It seems they're preoccupied with love talks."

[It's a world where entertainment is scarce, so perhaps it can't be helped.]

Unlike the world of my previous life, this world is not filled with entertainment.

As a result, many women are curious about the love lives of others.

[By the way, about that pathetic brother comment you made earlier.]

"I saw my brother who was silent without saying anything and just thought so. It's actually pathetic."

[I've repeatedly advised you to look in the mirror and speak up. In the first place, the people around you recognize that Master is more of a problem than your brother's pathetictness.]

"No, not nearly as bad as *aniki*."

When I said that, I looked at the women, and they took their eyes off the screen and looked at me. Livia says to Ange.

"Do you think this is one of Leon-san's usual jokes?"

Ange answered with a lot of concern.

"I wonder? I hope he's joking, that's my wish."

Noelle looks surprised and denies my words.

"Leon is worse than Nix-san when it comes to romance."

When I was shocked by the poor evaluation, Deirdre-senpai and Claris-senpai are also talking in a whisper with their faces close together.

"Which one do you think is worse?"

"They're both terrible, but last night he came to my room and complimented me on my appearance, so I guess Leon-kun wins, just barely?"

"— Wait a minute. He didn't say anything to me?"

That was last night.

At the request of a senior, I visited Claris-senpai's room and complimented her.

I was just keeping my promise, but for some reason, the women's gazes turned stern.

When I ask Luxion, who is by my side, for help, he makes a dumbfounded voice as he projects the image.

[Did you not realize that praising only one person would cause problems?]

"I don't think they'd be pleased with my compliments"

[If someone else does the same thing, Master will blame him. It's not too late to have good self-esteem.]

Why am I being blamed so much?

As I was wishing he would be nicer to me, I saw movement in the image.

"*Aniki* is making a move."

"Do-Dorothea-san!"

When Nix stood up from his seat and raised his voice, Dorothea, who had been looking down, looked up and replied.

"Y-Yes!"

They stare at each other.

But Nix couldn't stop breaking out in a cold sweat inside.

(She looks like a different person from yesterday)

Previously, Dorothea was a woman with a noticeably cold demeanor who didn't even want to look at Nix.

But what he sees in front of him now is a woman who looks cuter than her age.

Nix can't decide which one is the real one.

(B-But I have to say it properly)

He is a man who suddenly became the heir of the Baron family due to circumstances.

He has not received a proper education at the school and is still learning various jobs while helping his father.

He could not imagine that Dorothea, a real lady, would be his wife.

The status was out of proportion, but it was hard to believe that a genuine young lady could survive in the countryside.

"The Bartfalt family is a countryside compared to the city. You will be in a rural area. Dorothea-san, do you want to live here?"

Dorothea was a little puzzled by the different wording from yesterday.

"If I decide to marry, I will live in any place I choose. I-Is that not good enough for you?"

Nix was bewildered by Dorothea's calm demeanor after she had asked him yesterday, "Are you ready to be a pet?"

"It's not that it's no good — but you should seriously consider it. Because if you're used to living in the city, you'll find this place boring."

"*E-Etto*"

Both of them were confused.

When Nix took his seat and closed his mouth, the conversation stopped once again and a silent moment continued.

This time, Dorothea moved.

"*Ano*--I have something to tell you."

What was placed on the table with a clattering sound was a collar with a chain attached.

For a moment, Nix wondered if he had misplaced the collar yesterday—Then he noticed something strange about Dorothea holding the collar.

“Eh?”

(Why does this person have a collar? Yesterday she saw the collar and jumped out of the room and shouldn't have returned to the mansion from there. And—It's not the same as the collar Leon prepared, is it?!)

That collar, however, had a collar on each end of the chain.

Dorothea puts one of the two collars around her neck.

Then she offered another one to Nix.

(What's this? Really what's this?! Eh, what does this mean? Maybe this is a joke in the city?!)

Dorothea smiles at the confused Nix, her face reddened.

“I'm sorry I ran away yesterday. I've been waiting for a long time. Someone to put a collar on me.”

“Eh? That? But there are two collars?”

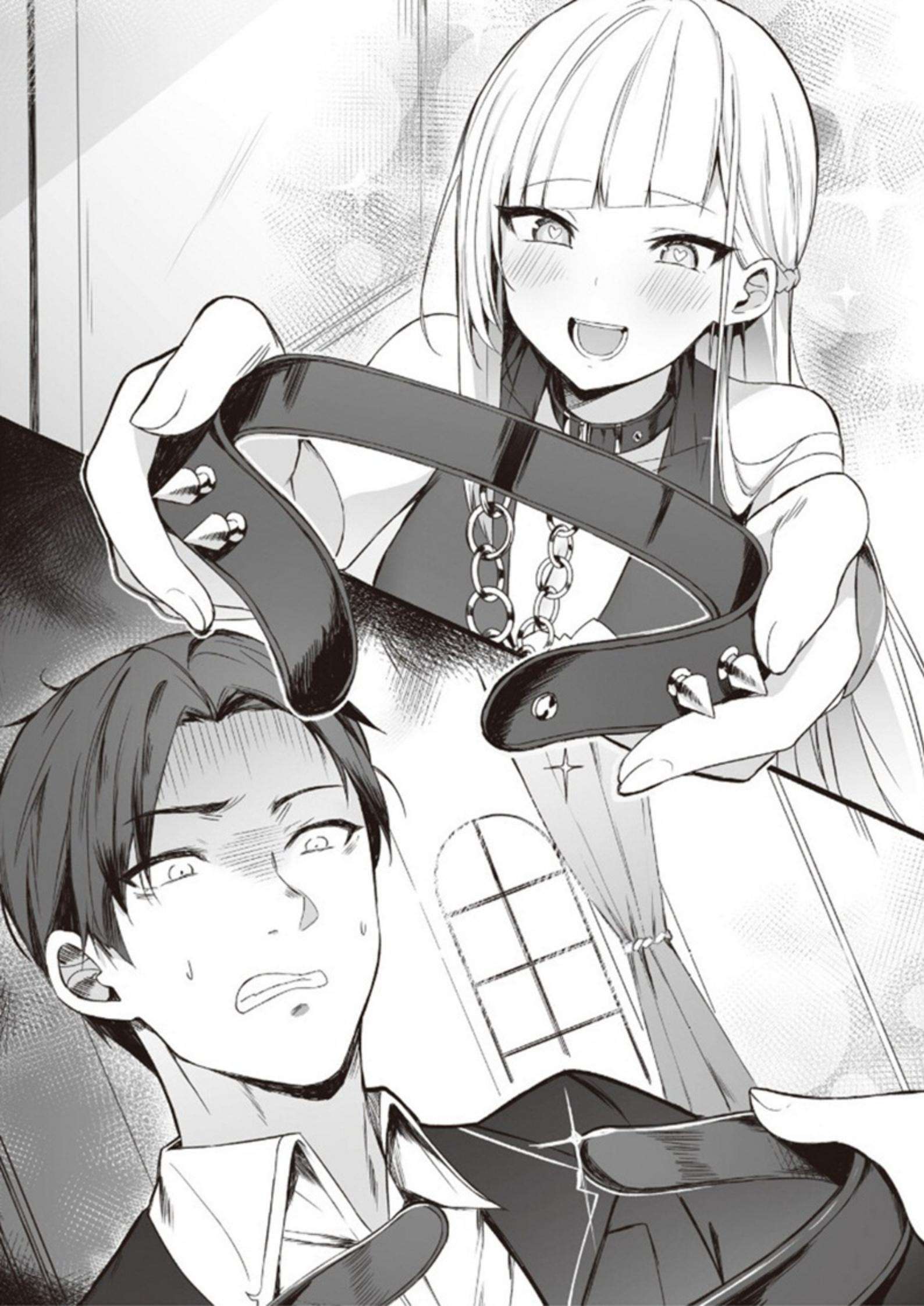
When Nix was too confused to answer properly after receiving the collar, Dorothea continued.

“To be honest, I'm not interested in a gentleman who would be satisfied with a pet. What I wanted was a partner who would compete with me until the very last minute, when one or the other would take control. Either obey the partner or make the partner obey. A rival who could compete with me was the kind of man I was looking for. When Nix-sama threw down the challenge to me, I already felt fate.”

The expression disappeared from Nix's face.

Then he realized.

(This person is dangerous. It's strange when she happily brings me a collar, but I don't understand why she wants to fight for dominance as a couple. What I want is to be a good couple like my parents. It's the exact opposite!)



Nix's ideal is the opposite of Dorothea's ideal.

Realizing that this would never go well with her, Nix tried to think of a way to refuse. However, he couldn't help but think of Leon's laughing face.

(It's all Leon's fault that I'm in this weird situation! If he hadn't done something unnecessary, she wouldn't have fallen in love with me!)

For some reason, Dorothea has fallen in love.

Nix was happy to have a beautiful woman interested in him, but he was not a good match for her by any means.

But even so, she was a lady of higher rank.

As he was choosing his words to refuse her gently, Dorothea reached out her hand.

She takes the collar that Nix was holding and puts it on him.

Their collars were tied to each other by chains, making for an indescribable sight.

"I just wanted to connect with the man of my dreams like this for once."

Nix couldn't stop the cold sweat in front of Dorothea, who said that with an ecstatic look on her face.

(This is definitely a no good persooon!)

Nix was desperately trying to think of a way to get out of this situation, while throwing all the abusive words he had to Leon in his mind.

“Impossible! Absolutely impossible!”

After the second meeting, Nix had a strategy meeting with me.

The goal is to avoid marrying Dorothea-san in a peaceful manner.

Dorothea-san's eyes on Nix were passionate as if she were a predator.

I sensed a strong will not to let him go.

"She wants to be a couple who collars each other and cherishes the tension—It's the exact opposite of *aniki*'s ideal. Why don't you just give up?"

In front of Nix, who held up his fists, I raised my hands in a pose of surrender.

"Okay, let's talk about it. In this case, we can rely on Ange, who knows a lot about noble society."

I faced Ange and she looked a little apologetic to Nix.

"I didn't think it would work out this way either. I'd like to do something about it, but it's difficult when things get this complicated. Perhaps Nix-dono should consider the option of marrying Dorothea, I thought?"

Nix shook his head from side to side several times, strongly indicating his refusal.

"That is impossible!"

"If Dorothea hadn't been so eager, we could have refused."

According to Ange's original plan, if we refused, it would just be a visitation, so it was no problem.

Apparently, if Nix didn't like it, there was no problem in refusing.

It's just that Dorothea has gotten serious.

"It's troubling. Dorothea is going to formally ask for matchmaking with the help of her parents' family. If the Roseblade family is serious, they'll do their best to remove obstacles in the way of their objective."

Apparently, in order to get his daughter, Dorothea-san, married, the Count family will get serious.

The real intention spilled.

"I'm scared of the count family who took it seriously."

Then Nix grabbed me by the chest with tears in his eyes.

"It's your fault! Why should I be targeted by the Count's family!"

"It wasn't your life they were after, but your chastity."

A beautiful woman targeting your chastity, isn't it a reward, I thought so and gave a thumbs up, then he silently choked me.

Livia, who had been watching the exchange between us brothers, put her hand on her forehead and let out a sigh.

"The story has gotten complicated."

Ange seems to be reflecting on the situation.

"I figured it would be settled peacefully, so I left it alone, but it seemed it wasn't a good idea. However, this matchmaking is not a bad deal."

Nix stopped moving when he heard Ange's story, and I was released.

As I was holding my neck and choking, Luxion approached me.

[You deserved it]

"I was just trying to be funny. More importantly, what do you mean it's not a bad deal? It seems like a bad idea from *aniki*'s point of view, though?"

Nix nodded several times without saying a word, and Ange had some trouble explaining.

"Disregarding personal opinions, I'm just saying that it's not so bad if the families are connected. The Roseblade family are one of the most prestigious family. They have a lot of money and power. If you connect with such a family, you will be free from unnecessary troubles. — There are some annoyances to be involved in, though."

The annoyance, Ange said, was that the Bartfalt family would continue to attract all kinds of people.

In such cases, the name of the Roseblade family is said to protect them from

unscrupulous people.

Nix is troubled by what he hears.

"Is it good for the house? No, but —— to get married for the sake of it is a bit."

Nix considers marrying to protect his family, but the countryside nobles are not familiar with noble society, for better or worse.

As long as he followed the minimum rules, he was free to do the rest.

I wouldn't say it's free of power struggles, but it's a warm environment for the nobles who are engaged in real power struggles.

He has the idea of marrying for the sake of the house, but he also thinks about his own happiness—— or so I thought, but Nix is different.

"——She's in love with fake me. If she married me, I bet she'd feel like she got tricked. Marrying for the sake of the family and then being tricked into it without love is awful, right? I can't let her go that far for the good of the family."

Apparently, it was Dorothea-san that Nix was worried about.

"*Aniki*"

I was surprised that he was even thinking about his partner.

Luxion talks to me.

[He's a great brother. And yet, Master did something unnecessary and troubling him——That was rude to both of them. Why don't you reflect on that?]

"Don't poke the painful part! ——W-Well, I'm reflecting."

It's true that I crossed a line that I shouldn't have crossed, hoping that the other party would hate him.

Nix took a deep breath and then forced himself to smile at us.

"I'm sorry I bothered you guys, too. I'll go apologize. I'm prepared to take a hit, and I'll

ask that the complaints be kept to me personally somehow."

"*Aniki*, I apologize too"

"I thought you might get me in trouble, so no. Well, but it's the fact, you've been making moves on my behalf. —— Just reflect on it. Swear it!"

Even this and that happened, he's kind.

Family is truly a wonderful thing.

Except for the sisters.

The garden in the evening.

"In the end, it just bothered my brother."

I let out a sigh, and next to me were Luxion and Noelle in a wheelchair.

Ange and Livia are accompanying Nix.

When he apologized to Dorothea, she couldn't do anything too extreme if Ange was there——So it seems.

I even made Ange clean up my mess.

I was going to ask her to move if it became troublesome, but when it actually happened, I found myself thinking a lot about it.

Luxion is dumbfounded by my depression.

[If you don't want to worry about it, don't do it. You talk like a big shot, but when a problem arises, you get depressed? The quality is bad.]

"I'll also reflect on it."

[I'd like to see you move a little more thoughtfully.]

"That's absurd advice for a fool. ——In the first place, if I could have done that, I wouldn't be struggling as much as I am now."

I'm sitting on the edge of a flower bed in the garden, talking with Luxion, and Noelle is trying to cheer me up.

"Since Deirdre-san has forgiven you, you don't have to be depressed anymore."

"I did hurt her, though"

Immediately after that, I told Deirdre-senpai what had happened.

I said —— the matter of the collar wasn't what I really meant, I was going to let it fail because I thought it was a matchmaking.

Deirdre-senpai said —— "I wish you hadn't put on such a bad act and told me the truth."

She accepted my apology, but she looked a little sad.

I should have explained this to Deirdre-senpai beforehand.

Ange said, "Let's make use of this failure next time."

From the beginning, Ange had thought that I would fail.

She said —— If I experience a failure, it will be in my bones and I'll be careful next time.

In a way, it was a move I could make because I was dealing with Deirdre-senpai I knew.

I just don't think I'll be able to have a proper relationship with her in the future.

It was too rude to Dorothea-san.

—— Well, either way, Deirdre-senpai said that she would let bygones be bygones on this matter.

Noelle repeatedly tries to cheer me up when I'm depressed, but Colin arrives from the mansion.

"Noelle-neechan! It's already evening and it's going to get cold. Let's go back to the

room quickly."

Colin quickly got behind Noelle and started pushing the wheelchair.

"Wait a minute. I'm still talking to Leon."

Noelle tried to get Colin to wait, but it was starting to get cold.

After all, it is cold when the sun goes down, so I ask Noelle to go into the mansion.

"Okay. Colin, escort Noelle back."

"Leave it to me!"

Colin, pushing the wheelchair, is concerned about Noelle.

"Let's go, Noelle-nee-chan"

"Sorry for always doing this, Colin"

"Un. I-I like to do it too, so it's okay."

As I watched them leave, I noticed that Colin's figure was larger than before.

"Colin's growing up, too "

[I judge that he is growing up healthily, both physically and mentally. Why don't you grow up too, Master?]

"If anyone wanted to grow and could do it, no one would have any trouble."

The next day, the port had a strange atmosphere.

"Thank you for taking care of us. I'm sorry it ended this way."

Dorothea-san bowed to our family and headed straight for the Roseblade family airship.

Dorothea-san, looking down and teary-eyed, gets in without even looking at us, accompanied by the servants around her.

I heard that Dorothea-san was in tears when Nix told her the truth.

The sight of her depressed figure made my heart tighten.

The gaze of the servants and knights of the Roseblade family on Nix was very stern.

Standing next to Nix, I whispered to him.

“Why didn’t you mention my name?”

“A big brother has his principles too, you know. It would be pathetic to have you cover for me.”

With that, Nix saw Dorothea-san off and left the port.

Instead, I was approached by Ange.

“Don’t take this literally. Nix-dono didn’t want to bother you, so he kept Leon’s plan a secret. It seems that Deirdre also heard about it and kept quiet about it.”

“For me?”

“He is a kind brother. It’s the one thing you can’t understand, even if you wanted to. Leon, you should take care of your own family.”

The airship of the Roseblade family leaves the port and moves away.

Deirdre-senpai didn’t talk to me after all, either.

” —— I lost a lot of things.”

I have lost many things as a result of my cheap actions.

Ange says.

“In any case, if we had refused, we would have ended up estranged. I’m sure they’re aware of that.”

The airship of the Roseblade family.

In one of the rooms on the ship, Deirdre was comforting Dorothea.

“A coincidence is scary, isn’t it?”

“Yeah”

“It would be useless to tell onee-sama now not to mind it.”

“Yeah”

“There are a lot of men out there as there are stars. Among them, there may be a gentleman who is ideal for onee-sama.”

” —— It’s enough.”

Lying in bed, hugging a pillow, Dorothea had her back to Deirdre.

Then she talks about her current feelings.

“I’ll stop chasing my ideals forever. When we get back, tell otou-sama to go ahead and use me for a political marriage. If I can’t have what I want, I’d rather have nothing at all.”

Deirdre looked at Dorothea and let out a sigh, thinking that she was seriously hurt.

(How much better it would have been if they had just refused normally)

It was made even more complicated by Leon’s outlandish plan.

In the future, Deirdre believes that the Bartfalt and Roseblade families will never be related.

(That said, we couldn’t be hostile to them —— and that’s a very troublesome thing.)

The Roseblade family now has no intention of retaliating against the Bartfalt family.

The fact that Duke Redgrave is behind Leon is troublesome, but the biggest problem is Leon himself.

(I'll advise *otou-sama* to leave *onee-sama* alone for a while?)

As Deirdre was about to leave the room, a knight came rushing into the room.

Normally, this would have been rude behavior, but from his panic, Deirdre could tell that it was an emergency.

“What’s the matter?”

“The sky pirates! There are over ten ships heading this way!”

“Ten ships? Why are there so many sky pirates here ?!”

The airship carrying the family crest of the Roseblade family was attacked by sky pirates.

“Leon-sama, it’s time for you to get back on your feet.”

After seeing them off, I lay down on the sofa in the living room and thought about many things.

Perhaps I looked depressed, but Yumeria-san, dressed in a maid’s uniform, worried about me.

Noelle also sits in a wheelchair, a sapling of the sacred tree freed from its case — sapling-chan on her lap.

Apparently, it was being brought outside for a breath of fresh air.

“I know you’re thinking about it, but I think you need to do something about your attitude. Angelica-san was worried about Leon’s depression. “I’ve gone too far.” She said.

Seeing my depressed state, even Ange says she feels remorseful that she went too far.

It was not my intention to worry Ange, who had been watching over me to make sure I got a lot of experience.

“She doesn’t have to worry about me”

“No, of course, she’s worried. In that case, do you want to join this child sunbathing?”

Noelle takes sapling-chan in both hands and holds her out to me.

“Sapling-chan?”

Yumeria-san holds my hands and tells me with a smile.

“Yes! This child really prefers to be outside. But I can’t plant it everywhere, so I sometimes take it outside like this.”

Since Sapling-chan was a sacred tree, it could not be planted anywhere.

I’m worried about it being stolen, but depending on where it’s planted, there may be concession issues in the future.

Therefore, for now, it was being forced to endure in a cramped bowl.

“Let’s find a place to plant the sapling-chan”

Thinking about looking and bringing Luxion since he was free, the mansion started to get hectic.

“What?”

When I got up and walked out into the hallway, I saw that our official, who was usually supposed to be at the port, had arrived.

He is an official who seems to be in charge of paperwork, and in a previous life, he was a man dressed like an old clerk. He is wearing a white shirt and a pair of black arm covers.

He is a slender person who wears glasses and looks weak.

Such a person had rushed into the mansion in a hurry.

Now he's at the door talking to Dad.

"There are more than ten air pirates?! Is the Roseblade family's airship safe!"

"Y-Yes! A knight from the Roseblade family crash-landed in the harbor in armor. He seems to be chased by more than a dozen air pirates and is seeking help."

Dad, who was approaching the official, had a difficult expression on his face as he listened to what was being said.

A countryside baron family like ours has a very small number of war airships.

Even to have one warship, there is a large maintenance cost.

However, the Bartofalt family, which has recently started to make more money, is building up its military strength by adding more warships.

Still, we only have three ships.

It was reckless to take on a foe that was simply three times larger, but it was the Roseblade family who had asked for help.

It's a bad idea to abandon them here.

I approached Dad, who was being asked to make such a difficult decision and joined in the conversation.

"Just tell me the location and I'll take the Einhorn to help."

Dad suddenly spoke up and turned his head to look at me with a surprised look on his face.

"Leon? No, but are you sure you're okay?"

Dad knows how fast Einhorn is.

But for some reason, he hesitated.

" — It's no good. Anyway, just gather people and prepare for departure."

“Yes”

As the official ran off, I closed in on my dad.

“Why? It’ll be faster if I go!”

“Why don’t you look around a little bit?”

Dad glanced behind me as he walked out of the mansion.

When I turned around, it was Livia who was there.

“Are you going to fight again?”

Livia, who has a very worried look on her face, is looking down.

“Livia? It’s okay. Luxion is here, and Einhorn can kick the crap out of the sky pirates. There’s also Arroganz, so don’t worry.”

Livia looked up, but her expression remained clouded.

“Didn’t I say you should take a rest for now?”

“But Deirdre-senpai is”

I heard a few footsteps, it was Ange and the others with Luxion.

There’s also Claris-senpai.

Ange was a little out of breath, perhaps in a hurry.

“Leon, don’t leave. There are airships in the harbor, both ours and the Atley’s. There are four of them combined, and with the Baron’s forces, we can manage.”

It seems that it’s not only Ange who doesn’t want me to come out, but also Claris-senpai.

“The Roseblade family are strong. They won’t be easily defeated by sky pirates. The Atley family will lend a hand, so Leon-kun should get some rest.”

"— No, I'll come out. That is faster."

The Redgrave family, the Atley family — And the Roseblade family that is fighting the sky pirates, are all prestigious in the Kingdom of Horfalt.

They're also putting a lot of effort into their military, and they're definitely dependable.

But it'll be easier to clean up if I come out.

"I've caused a lot of trouble for Deirdre-senpai and the others. And while I'm at it, as an apology, I'll come out."

"Wait, this blockhead!"

As Ange tried to grab my hand, Nix came running down the hallway, grabbed me by the chest and pushed me against the wall.

"*Aniki?*"

Nix wrinkles his brow and glares at me.

"Leon, lend me your hand. I need your help."

"Ha? No, I'm leaving now."

"I'll save them. I'll do something for Dorothea-san. I need to borrow your airship."

CHAPTER 5

BIG BROTHER OF THE FIEND KNIGHT

The Roseblade family's airship had fled into the clouds.

Surrounded by more than ten airships of sky pirates, there was no way they could win, so they fled at full speed into the clouds.

The visibility was poor and they couldn't even see a little bit ahead, but thanks to that, they were undetected by the enemy.

However, they could not hide in the flowing clouds forever, and if they went out, they would be discovered by sky pirates.

Deirdre and Dorothea look out the window from inside the room.

The windows were wet and visibility was poor, so they couldn't see anything.

"I hope the knights who went to seek help got there safely."

When they entered the clouds, the knights jumped out in their armor.

Each of them flew in a different direction to ask for help.

If even one person reaches an ally somewhere, their survival rate will increase.

The closest and most reliable ally is the Bartfalt family.

(He owes me for his dishonest behavior, and I'm sure he'll come to my aid —— The question is, will they make it in time.)

As they were praying for help to come to them while they were still alive, they saw Dorothea clasping her hand and holding it to her chest.

She looked pale, perhaps she was anxious.

“Deirdre seems to be all right. You’re so different from me.”

Seeing Dorothea trembling, Deirdre smiled and tried to relieve her tension.

The truth is that she’s scared and it can’t be helped.

However, having been through several critical situations, she was able to remain a little more calm than Dorothea.

The first time was when she encountered the Principality’s army at a school event.

The second time was when the Principality invaded the royal capital.

She has been close to the battlefield and has experienced scary things.

“Even though I look like this, I’ve been through many a crisis. I’m a very lucky person, so I’m sure I’ll get through this one without a hitch.”

“That’s very encouraging”

Seeing Deirdre’s attitude, the maids in the room looked relieved.

But she’s just trying to be strong.

(Both of those times, I had help, though)

Both were saved by Leon, and remembering that, Deirdre reflected on her attitude when leaving the port.

(I should have behaved better in greeting him. It would be very sad if this is the last time we see each other in this life.)

Then the sun was shining through the window.

“Are we through the clouds? What’s the situation out there?!”

The airship broke out of the hiding clouds, and the sky pirates’ airship was visible through the window.

The only people in the room were women, and there were several small screams.

Just from what can be seen from outside the window, three air pirates can be identified.

"They seem to be quite skilled."

Deirdre muttered bitterly.

The Roseblade family is considered a martial family among the lord nobles.

Such is the airship that the daughters of the Roseblade family board, and as a matter of course, it is assigned with those who have experienced in actual combat.

If even they can't escape, then the opponent must be quite skilled.

In the first place, when someone leads more than ten ships, they are a big deal as sky pirates.

However, when Deirdre saw the flags of such sky pirates, she could not think of their names.

For this reason, she assumed that they were new sky pirates who had come from other countries.

"I don't know where they're from, but don't expect to get away free by messing with Roseblade Family."

The Roseblade family's airship was ready with its cannons, ready to intercept the sky pirates.

Even in the face of inferior forces, they are moving as they were trained to do.

The sky pirates saw the movement and, perhaps wary of it, did not approach carelessly.

However, once the ships were lined up, they lined up their cannons and started firing straight away.

The cannonball fired from the cannon exploded when it was blocked by the magical barrier that had been deployed to protect the airship of the Roseblade family.

The impact reached the inside of the ship, causing it to shake violently.

The surrounding furniture was fixed in place and did not move, but the violent vibrations knocked people over and scattered small objects.

“Why aren’t we attacking!”

Dorothea screams in confusion, but Deirdre guesses from the look of things outside that even if she turns to attack, she’ll be ganged up and sink.

(I don’t know the situation in detail here)

Both Deirdre and Dorothea were daughters of the Roseblade family, but since they were not military personnel, they were currently denied access to the bridge because they were deemed to be in the way.

Outside the window, armor with piercing decorations flew up one after another from the airships of the sky pirates.

There were many of them, and they seemed to be air pirates who possessed enough strength to fight.

Deirdre was horrified by the movements of the sky pirates and their strength.

(It’s like an army)

They seemed to be well coordinated and even too well equipped for sky pirates.

The armor of the Roseblade family also comes out one after another to intercept them, but they are clearly outnumbered.

As Deirdre was expecting the worst, an airship appeared to charge the sky pirates.

Seeing that figure, Deirdre opened her fan and muttered.

“Impressive appearance, Einhorn”

The unique airship that Leon was riding in seemed to be the only thing that made the people around him immediately realize that their ally had arrived.

While sighs of relief and cheers went up everywhere, Deirdre was alone in a cold sweat.

Although she appeared to be composed to those around her, the truth was that she was scared.

She struggled to hold on to the feeling that she was about to collapse from relief and weakness.

It's just that, from Deirdre's point of view, Einhorn's condition is strange.

"Arroganz not showing up?"

Einhorn's bridge was filled with disheveled men.

The first of them is my father.

"You really rushed into the enemy? Y-You guys, hurry up and move out! All armor out!"

The soldiers of the Bartofalt family, who were on the bridge right and left, were operating an unfamiliar airship.

I'm tied to the captain's chair and can't do anything.

"Why am I being detained?"

"It's because you're reckless. I really didn't want to bring you here."

Einhorn can't give his all without Luxion.

And Luxion only obeys my orders.

As a result, I had to go with them, but they didn't let me do anything in return.

"It's ridiculous. This is my ship!"

"That's why I let you on. Anyway, are Nix and the others going to be okay?"

Dad worries about Nix, who has gotten into his armor and sailed off.

Luxion explains the armor that Nix has gotten into.

[The armor is manufactured in my factory. I can guarantee its performance. I've calculated the difference in strength between us and the air pirates, and I don't see a problem.]

Still, Dad wasn't convinced.

"Because there are no absolutes in war "

I asked my overly concerned father to release me.

"Then I'll come out and support *aniki*. Can you release me for the time being?"

"You're too quick to be reckless, so no."

"The ladies have told me not to send you out so strongly."

Dad and Luxion are definitely not going to let me go out there.

Is *aniki* gonna be okay?

Nix, riding in metal-colored, less ornate armor, was fighting the armor that the sky pirates were riding in, along with the others around him.

The sky was in a state of melee between friend and foe, with Einhorn attacking and sinking one airship after another with its cannons.

The sky pirates were confused by Einhorn's sudden appearance.

However, they seemed to be able to determine that they were enemies, and they attacked Nix and the others.

"Do you know whose guests you're messing with!"

Out on the battlefield, Nix, more outspoken than usual, was cursing and attacking his enemies.

The metal-colored armor that Nix rides in has a shield in its left hand.

In his right hand, he was holding a Glaive — He was carrying a weapon that looked like a naginata, and he had stabbed one of the sky pirates to death.

The armor of the sky pirate is falling, but if they are lucky, they will survive because below is the sea.

With no time to pay attention to the enemy in the sky, Nix looked for the next one.

“Chi!”

Clicking his tongue, Nix used the shield in his left hand to catch one of the armors that was swooping down from directly above him.

As it was, the two machines clashed their weapons as they fell.

The enemy was formidable, as if they had some very skilled pilots on board.

The closer they are, the more they can hear.

“A one-horned airship! That’s the ship of a fiend knight!”

The Einhorn is an airship with a distinctive appearance and seems to be quite famous.

They even knew Leon’s other name.

“Then what?”

Nix’s armor kicks the enemy away, creating distance between them.

They began to fight, circling in the air, occasionally approaching each other and clashing their weapons.

“Are you the fiend knight?”

“That’s my little brother”

“Are you saying that the fiend knight had a brother?”

“I’m sorry for being a plain big brother!”

As they fought in conversation, it seemed that Leon's name was spreading even to the sky pirates.

Nix's inferiority complex is stimulated by hearing this.

(A plain big brother who doesn't stand out because he has a capable little brother --)

Leon became famous as soon as he entered the academy.

He stood out from the rest because of what he said and did, and he was a student who was often talked about in one way or another.

If people knew that Leon had a big brother, he would be compared to him a lot even if he doesn't want it.

Compared to Leon's behavior, Nix, who is more modest, has often been referred to behind his back as "the unskilled brother" or "the inconspicuous brother".

That school life was over a year ago, but after that, every time Leon was active, he heard about it and compared himself to him.

He knew that no matter how hard he tried, he would never be as good as Leon, and he wondered why they were so different.

It would be a lie to say that he doesn't get jealous.

After his heroic and flashy career, Leon has made a big name for himself and found himself with three beautiful, good-natured fiancées.

He understands that there is no point in being envious.

But -- Nix was a kinder man than that.

(Every single one of them said that Leon was a hero or a great guy -- Do you know how much trouble that guy has caused me!)

In Nix's mind, Leon was always going to be a handful little brother.

"I'm not afraid if the fiend knight doesn't show up. I'm going to defeat you and run away!"

The enemies try to escape from this battlefield by defeating the Nix who are chasing them.

Nix went full speed with his armor and approached the enemy, striking him with his shield to knock him off his feet.

“He doesn’t need to come out for you guys!”

Nix remembers what happened before he boarded the Einhorn.

“Don’t let Leon fight?”

“Please”

Before boarding the Einhorn.

The three people who came to visit were Ange, Livia — and Noelle.

Ange is a Duke’s daughter, but now she’s bowing before Nix.

“Even if I stop him, he’ll still leave, right?”

“I want you to stop that.”

Nix is bewildered by Ange’s request, and now Livia tells him what happened.

“Leon-san is, I think he’s fought too many battles in a short period of time and is more mentally exhausted than he thinks he is. Even in the Republic, he was so reckless that he couldn’t sleep and had to resort to drugs. That’s why!”

Hearing that he had taken to drugs made Nix realize that Leon must be in more pain than he thought.

When a concerned Livia, stumbled over her voice, Noelle took over.

“I feel bad for Nix-san. But Luxion also told me that he needs to rest for now. Please. If Leon tries to fight, please stop him.”

Nix gave a small nod when he saw that the three of them were terribly worried about Leon.

(I envy you. Leon —— you're so loved)

“He’s always getting himself into trouble, pushing himself too hard, and making everyone around him worry! Even though he became a marquis, he still makes me clean up after him!”

He kicked off the armor of the sky pirates, and used the glaive he was holding to hit the enemy’s weapon.

As Nix closes the distance, the enemy panics and shows his back to get out of range.

He thrust the Glaive there.

Maybe the pilot is safe, and a loud scream is heard.

“I-I understand. Surrender! I surrender, so please let me go!”

“It’s too late for that. Go cool your head!”

As he pulls out the Glaive he stabbed, the armor falls into the sea.

Nix took a moment to regulate his ragged breathing and moved his gaze around the area to find any remaining enemies.

“He really —— How much are you going to make the people around you worry. Look over here too. I can’t be bothered with you all the time, either.”

It reminded him of his gentle sisters-in-law who were concerned about Leon’s well-being.

At the same time, Nix was relieved.

” —— But with those girls by his side, I guess Leon is safe now.”

He also feels sad to see his little brother, whom he took care of as a child, going off on

his own.

While he was making light-hearted comments in his mind to be free from his troublesome little brother, what he spotted in the corner of his eye was the armor of the enemy that had boarded the airship of the Roseblade family.

“They are people who not knowing when to give up!”

Fly towards the deck of the Roseblade family.

The armor of the sky pirate had landed on the deck and was about to go on a rampage in a last desperate attempt.

That's where Nix charges in.

As he held up his shield and hit the body, the enemy's armor was blown off the deck and fell.

Perhaps the impact was too strong, but apparently the current blow had rendered him unable to act.

It was the same for Nix.

“I've done it”

A danger alarm goes off in the cockpit, telling him that there is a problem with various parts of the aircraft.

However, it seems that the battle is over.

The surroundings were quiet and Nix made sure it was safe before opening the hatch and getting out.

“I wonder if Luxion will be mad at me?”

The Roseblade family gathered as Nix, worried that he had broken the armor he had borrowed, landed on the deck.

One of them is the knight who stared at him as they left the port.

Now he smiles and shakes Nix's hand with both of his.

"It really saves us! You are a lifesaver"

"Eh? N-No, well."

Nix smiled vaguely and faked it, which made him feel a little better.

(Now we're even for the trouble, aren't we?)

As the crowd gathered and became more lively, the women came out from the ship.

Dorothea was among them.

"Nix-sama?"

Comes to give thanks.

However, Dorothea looked quite surprised when she realized that it was Nix who was on deck.

It is the same for Nix.

" —— Dorothea-san"

The deck had been in a celebratory mood earlier, but when the two of them came face to face, the atmosphere became rather tense.

Nix looked apologetic, but Dorothea was looking down and sad.

Dorothea thanks Nix for his help.

"On behalf of the Roseblade family, I would like to express our gratitude. Thank you for your help. Nix-sama is our lifesaver."

Nix is called a lifesaver and denies it with a wave of his hands.

"I-It's not that big a deal."

Dorothea smiles sadly when she hears Nix's words.

"Too much humility can be sarcasm. You have certainly risked your life to save us. To make light of this is to say that our lives are of no importance."

Nix, who has spent a lot of time in the countryside, is modest, but he apologizes again when he is told that it would be rude to be overly so.

"That's right. I was wrong."

They thanked each other, but they remained facing each other, did not open their mouths and only time passes.

As the people around them grew impatient to see the two of them, Deirdre deliberately opened her fan to cover her mouth.

Then she instructed the others.

"I'll leave the care of the guest to onee-sama. Everyone else, return to your posts. --- Onee-sama, escort the guest to the ship."

After urging Dorothea to lead the way, Deirdre turned her gaze to Einhorn, who was approaching.

"I will talk to that side."

The airships of the Einhorn and Roseblade family line up in the sky.

In the enclosure, an allied airship was holding the sky pirates.

For some reason, it was I who had been restrained until now, who was dealing with Deirdre-senpai, who had arrived on the deck of the Einhorn.

There is Luxion by my side, but the others are busy working.

My dad also had a reason and avoided facing Deirdre-senpai.

--- He ran away from talking to a higher ranked opponent.

Well, the person I was talking to was an acquaintance of mine, so I guess he thought I

was the right person to talk to.

Deirdre-senpai is in a good mood.

"You have helped me many times. I'll be sure to repay you for this."

Then I wanted to ask for my demotion.

But no matter what I do, Roland will get in the way.

"If you're going to thank me, then you'd better make this whole thing even. The truth is, *aniki* —— not Nix, but me the one who caused the trouble, please tell that to Dorothea-san."

"I'll let her know. In the meantime, I would like to thank you again and invite you to the main territory of Roseblade House, though?"

I guess they invite the person who saved their lives to their house and have a party to thank us.

That's about as much credit as we get, but our family is not good at formal parties.

Even if we participated, I'm sure we wouldn't enjoy it.

However, it is also a problem to be invited and refused.

Let's also apologize for this time and visit the Roseblade family.

Maybe I'll apologize there and this whole thing will be over —— That's I hope.

"I'm not good at stiff formal parties, so I'd prefer something casual. We're from the countryside, so we don't know much about etiquette."

"Leave it to me. We won't embarrass our guests."

We'll visit the Roseblade family again with the rest of the family, and I turn my head to look for Nix.

"More than that, where is my brother?"

The armor that Nix had been riding in was carried in by two armors.

But there was no sign of the pilot.

Deirdre-senpai spread her fan to cover her mouth.

“He’s talking to onee-sama.”

A reception room on the ship.

Nix and Dorothea face each other across the table. They have drunk the tea that the maid prepared and the cup is empty.

Dorothea had sent the maid away, so it was just the two of them.

(What am I doing in a place like this?)

There is no talking to the person who hurt her.

He didn’t want to make her feel any more uncomfortable, so he decided to apologize again.

However, Dorothea speaks to him first.

“Let me ask you something”

“Y-Yes!”

Nix, his voice trailing off, put his fists on his knees and straightened his back.

He is facing Dorothea, but she looks very tired.

She must be very scared after being attacked by the sky pirates.

Nix noticed that the weak Dorothea had tears in her eyes.

She talks little by little about how the Knicks didn’t accept her.

“Am I not good enough?”

“Eh?”

“Does Nix-sama hate me? I want you to tell me which part is bad. I will fix what I can. That’s why—”

Dorothea swallows the last word, shakes her head, then straightens her back and smiles at Nix.

“—Excuse me. I was just trying to ask you what was unacceptable for the future.”

“I-Is that so. Etto—It’s not that I hate you, or anything like that. You’re very beautiful, and you’re too good for me.”

“Then what’s wrong? I-Is it a collar?”

Dorothea probably didn’t think her hobby was common either.

Nix wanted to say, “Yes, it is,” but he was an adult and decided to tell her in an offhand way.

“I think everyone has their own hobby, but I don’t think a collar is a good one. Why don’t we get to know each other better first? — I say that, but it’s not very convincing.”

(I’m sure Leon will be honest enough to point out the bad parts)

Nix becomes envious of his brother’s strong sense of self.

But he also understood that he was not the same person as Leon.

When Dorothea looks down, Nix speaks of his ideals.

“I’m from the countryside, so the fancy life in the city doesn’t suit me. If I were a nobleman, a political marriage would be the norm, but my parents are a relaxed couple. I wish I could be like them.”

He wants to be a couple like Barkas and Ruth.

“Which one will be obeying the other is wrong, or it’s just not for me. So you and I

shouldn't be together."

He predicts a future where both of them will be unhappy together due to their personality mismatch.

If he were to adapt to Dorothea, it would be too much for the Nix, and if he were to do the opposite, Dorothea would not be happy.

Dorothea raises her face.

"You should have talked to me like this at the beginning."

Dorothea's face, smiling a little sadly, had lost its sternness and had become calm.

The impression of an inhospitable, cold woman was not there, and even Nix could not help but be fascinated.

"Y-You're right. If I had just told you properly, we wouldn't have gotten into this kind of trouble."

Nix didn't even have to hurt Dorothea.

(Instead of relying on Leon, I should've been taking care of it myself. What a sloppy big brother I am)

Nix looks down and mocks himself. He looks up, straightens his posture, and bows his head to Dorothea.

"I'm really sorry"

Nix looks up as Dorothea calls out to him.

"You've apologized enough. —— But just let me say this."

When he prepares himself for at least one complaint, Dorothea is embarrassed.

"Nix-sama, who had come to our rescue, was not plain at all."

"Eh? C-Could it be that you were listening to that?"

Nix blushed in embarrassment when he realized that the conversation with the sky pirates had been overheard.

Dorothea was amused by Nix like that, and she smiled.

“Even a knight who dashes in at a crisis is embarrassed, isn’t he?”

“No, well, yes”

“You are a good person. You should be more confident.”

“When you have a brother who is capable, there’s a tendency to compare.”

“Ara, is there that feeling for your brother?”

“I won’t say that I don’t. But if you’re asking me if I can do it like Leon, I understand that I can’t.”

The conversation continued and the two of them smiled and talked until the maid came to call them.

There they were, talking more calmly than in their first meeting.

The home of the Roseblade family is a city, and they have a large castle.

The Count of Roseblade, the owner of the castle, seemed to be very worried when he heard that his two daughters had been attacked by sky pirates.

“I’m glad you’re both back safely.”

He was tall, well-trained, and had a stern look on his face.

But he hugged two of them when they returned to the castle.

Both Dorothea and Deirdre gave their father a somewhat dumbfounded look.

After all, there were still vassals around.

The vassals were troubled by the sweet sight with his two daughters.

“Otou-sama, the people around you are in trouble.”

“Do you have any idea how worried I am about you? The Roseblade family will send an army to the place where you were attacked. I will sink all the sky pirates in that area!”

Deirdre averted her gaze and refused to be involved, as if she was tired of dealing with him.

Dorothea consulted with her father, who repeatedly made radical statements, with a serious look in her eyes.

“Otou-sama, I have one request.”

“What is it? I heard that you didn’t get a chance this time, but I’m sure you’ll get another chance. That’s why you’ll have to hide your hobbies—”

Dorothea was a little annoyed with her father, who gently pointed out what was her bad parts, but talked about her request.

“Please listen to me. The truth is—”

CHAPTER 6

MARRIAGE

“The Roseblade family stronghold is different from what I imagined.”

[What kind of scene did you imagine?]

“Well, you know, like a bunch of rogue adventurers roaming around. I’ve heard they’re very proud to be adventurers, so you’d think there’d be more adventurers in the land, right?”

[I now understand Master’s image of adventurers. Master thought that adventurers, including yourself, were rogues.]

“It’s not that different, is it? The king of this country is some kind of rogue.”

The appearance is decent, but the content is awful.

We are now in the territory of the Roseblade family, which we were invited to visit.

Now, Luxion and I were strolling around the interior of the city.

Luxion checked his surroundings and said.

[I’m sure they’ve been expanding, but there’s a lot of unnecessary work. From an efficiency standpoint, there are a number of places that need to be improved.]

“It’s not a game. Don’t think everything’s easy.”

In my previous life, when building a road, there were many problems that had to be dealt with, starting with the briefing session for the people living around the road and the acquisition of land.

If large-scale changes are made just for the sake of efficiency, there will be many problems.

[If the nobility exists I think it's easier to improve than master thinks, though. The advantage of having an absolute authority is the speed of top-down action.]

"It's someone else's territory in the first place, and I don't have the right to speak out."

[You're right.]

The Roseblade family's castle is located in a walled fortified city.

It's not as big as the royal capital, but it's still very well developed compared to my parents' home.

The stone-built streets are elegant and fun to just stroll around.

[More importantly, was it okay for you to leave without permission?]

"The party is tonight. I'm free until then, right? Besides, the main actors this time are my dad and my brother. It doesn't matter if I'm not there, because I'm a supporting character. After all, I was just detained on the ship."

When I look at Luxion with a resentful eye, he turns his lens somewhere else to look away from me.

[It was Angelica and the others' decision. Originally, they wouldn't have wanted you to go into battle.]

If it's a request from Ange and the others, I can't ignore it, I let out a small sigh at Luxion's reaction.

"They are too worried"

I walk around with my hands in my trouser pockets.

Luxion, who was floating around my right shoulder, is still talking a lot of small talks today.

[I recommend that you take a mental break for a while. After all, Master——is an emergency avoidance!]

Luxion moved quickly from his spot, and a stone passed right by me.

“Dangerous! W-Who is it!”

I turned around and there they were, boys who looked like very bad kids.

He rubbed his fingers under his nose and held a pebble in his right hand.

“There’s something weird over there. Whoever hits that thing wins.”

He had come out of nowhere and started playing with Luxion as a target.

Throwing rocks at people, that’s pretty extreme play, isn’t it.

I guess they thought I was a civilian because I was dressed so roughly.

[—— New humans]

Holding Luxion in my right hand as he muttered disturbing words, I ran away from the children.

Luxion seems to be dissatisfied.

[Why are you running away? You should tell the Count’s family and punish them accordingly. Master is the Marquis of this country, and they deserve to be tried for serious crimes.]

“Just get out of here. I hate Troublesomeness!”

Even if you are a child, if you disobey a nobleman, you will be charged with a crime.

That is the value system of this world.

The Kingdom of Holfalt is, by my values, a people-friendly country.

But if you disobey a noble without reason, you will be judged normally.

I thought it would be less troublesome if I ran away, so I ran down the main street.

This place is probably like their garden, so if I go into the alley, I’ll be trapped.

On the contrary, it is better to flee the main street with dignity.

“Damn, he’s fast!”

The distance between us and the children who were chasing us opened up.

“Don’t underestimate me, kids! I’ll show you my dungeon-trained escape skills!”

Having gotten rid of the kids, holding Luxion in my hand, I went into a random coffee shop.

“Haa, I’m tired.”

Once I sit down and release the Luxion, the waitress comes to take the order.

I asked for a drink, and Luxion questioned me protestingly as the waitress moved away.

[Why did you run away? They attacked me and Master with clear hostility.]

“They are just kids? Overlook it.”

[—Is it an order?]

“That’s right. And also — That’s my request.”

[Request?]

What to do with children is a line that I cannot forgive personally.

It may be a value because I have a previous life, but I don’t like it because I personally dislike it.

“I’ll overlook it if I can. No, wait a minute. Do you think it would be a good idea to inform their parents and have them scold them? I backed down this time, but if this was another nobleman, it would be a big problem.”

I nodded a few times, and Luxion summed up my opinion.

[So you’re saying you won’t judge, but you will pay back? Don’t you have a hands-off policy with the children?]

“Because I’m angry, I’ll payback.”

[You are so intolerant.]

“You told me before that you don’t hate me for that. Besides, it’s better for the kids to be scolded while they still can. I’m worried about their future. Don’t you think I’m a tolerant person for thinking about their future?”

It’s a white line when I hear it myself, but they should be scolded while they still can.

I’d like them to stop throwing rocks in crowded places because it’s dangerous.

[If you are tolerant, wouldn’t you scold them yourself instead of seeking payback in the first place?]

“That’s true, too. Oh well. All right, let’s find out who these kids are and let their parents know. It’ll kill time till nightfall.”

” —— Well, if it makes you feel better, feel free to do it.”

“And so the evil is gone!”

I checked the houses of the children and informed their parents that they had been throwing rocks on the main street.

Sure enough, the kids were getting a good scolding from their parents.

When I returned to the Roseblade family’s castle, I was in a large room with my family, telling Ange and the others what had happened.

Ange looks at me and has an indescribable look on her face.

“Just when I thought what you were doing out there, you decide to pay the kids back? Leon, why don’t you calm down a little?”

Livia has a lot on her mind about what I’ve done.

“W-Well, I think it’s a good idea to get scolded while they are still young, as they may

cause problems in the future. But looking up the house is a bit.”

Noelle, sitting in a wheelchair, has a bitter expression.

“You go that far? You’re dealing with a child. Why don’t you just scold him right then and there and be done with it.”

The three of them neither denied nor agreed with my methods.

As I was talking to the three of them who were slightly taken aback by what I did, Colin came over.

“Noelle-neechan, mom is calling over there.”

“Oh, yeah? Then I have to go”

Noelle tried to move the wheelchair by hand, but Colin, a good kid, quickly got behind her and started pushing.

Our Colin is very different from the bad kids.

I’m happy as his big brother.

“I will push”

“Thank you as always”

Colin, who was happy to be praised by Noelle, blushed and looked down a little.

As they moved away, Ange, who had been watching them, put her hand on her forehead.

“They say that first love is unattainable, but it’s a little pitiful.”

Livia also looked at Colin sadly.

“Colin-kun, since he is usually pushing Noelle-san’s wheelchair, there are not many chances for them to see each other. Even when he does, he gets embarrassed and runs away.”

As it is, Ange and Livia were talking about something serious.

"Is that why Noelle doesn't notice? It's obvious from the surroundings."

"The problem is that Noelle-san can't see Colin-kun's face well because he's shy and moves behind her. It seems that even when he talks, he doesn't say much."

"It's a vicious circle. But it's also a problem if the people around tell him."

"Hmm, if it's me—"

—What are they talking about?

"What are you two talking about?"

When I asked honestly, Ange and Livia looked at me with surprised faces.

They looked at each other, but they shook their heads and didn't tell me anything.

"Eh, what? Luxion, do you know?"

[— Master is really dense. In some ways, it's worthy of respect.]

"So what? Tell me."

[Please think for yourself.]

In the end, no one answered me.

The party at the Roseblade house was to be held only for the people involved, in accordance with the wishes of Dad and aniki.

The format is a stand-up party, and the atmosphere is calm and not formal.

While I'm putting the food on the plate, Dad and aniki are surrounded by people from the Roseblade family, thanking them for killing the sky pirates.

They both looked uncomfortable, and I watched them from a distance.

Near Count Roseblade, I saw Deirdre-senpai and Dorothea-san.

“It must be hard being the main actors at a party”

When I muttered to myself as if it were someone else's problem, Luxion, who was by my side, picked it up and started a conversation.

[You're not used to parties, are you? Master, since a while ago, you've only been eating meat dishes. I strongly recommend that you consume vegetables.]

“I'll do my best when I feel like it.”

[--- I see]

If I copied Luxion's reply from a while ago, he would understand it and look unamused.

Even though he is an artificial intelligence, he is rich in emotion.

Looking around, I saw that Noelle in her wheelchair was also surrounded by a crowd of people.

Apparently, she was being asked about the situation in the Republic of Arzel.

Because of her position as a priestess of Sapling-chan, the people around her seemed to be very interested in her.

Mom and Colin are by her side.

As I was looking out for her with the intention of going to her aid if she needed anything, Livia came up to me and grabbed my arm.

“Leon-san, is my dress looking strange?”

“It looks good on you”

Dressed in an unfamiliar dress, Livia seemed concerned about her outfit.

“I got this dress with Ange, but I don't get many chances to wear such an expensive dress. Isn't it weird?”

The white and blue dress was a perfect match for Livia's image.

It was Ange in a red dress who approached an anxious Livia and intertwined her arms with her.

This one is composed, and she's used to wearing dresses.



"Don't worry, it looks good on you. More importantly, Count Roseblade would like to speak with Leon."

"Eh? I'm fine, though"

I tried to refuse, but Ange would not let me.

She tries to persuade me as if she were gently instructing a child.

"They can't ignore the Marquis who has been invited. It's just a matter of making small talk. Get used to it while you can."

I was reluctantly convinced when I heard that I would only be greeting the Count of Roseblade, who had invited me.

Ange asked Livia to do one thing.

"Bring Noelle too"

"Yes"

As Livia went to call Noelle, Ange intertwined her arms with me.

When our arms were crossed, she brought her face close to mine and whispered in my ear. Her breath tickled my ears, but more than that, I could hear the sexiness in Ange's voice.

"There's something a little odd about the party atmosphere "

" —— Are they going to pay us back?"

I guess I was excited to see her in a different dress than usual.

However, Ange was concerned about the condition of the party.

I was wary that he would use this opportunity to get payback for the rude behavior, but Luxion denied it.

[No, it's not. There is no danger around, and the food was not poisoned. Isn't it Angelica's mistake?]

It was a relief to hear that, but Ange would not change her opinion.

“No, something’s not right. It’s not hostile, but it’s bothering me.”

Ange’s hunch —— No, is it her intuition?

Anyway, she felt uneasy about the atmosphere of the place.

I was curious and looked around, but I didn’t see anything strange.

Claris-senpai was also at the party, but she was surrounded by people and was in the middle of the crowd. It’s been the same situation ever since the party started.

I’ve been trying to talk to her, but I can’t seem to get close enough to her, so I haven’t even been able to talk to Claris-senpai.

“Hm~m, there’s nothing unusual, though.”

Then, as Livia brought Noelle along, the Count Roseblade arrived with Deirdre-senpai, as if the timing was right.

However, there was no sign of Dorothea-san.

I searched for her just by sight and found her with Nix, who had been released and fled to the wall.

Ange must have noticed that, too.

“I guess this is where brothers resemble each other.”

“What?”

“Nothing”

Ange smiles, but when Count Roseblade arrives, she gives a curtsy, a greeting in which she pulls back one leg and bends over.

Livia imitated her a little later, but Ange’s gestures were more experienced and looked more beautiful.

The Count Roseblade spoke cheerfully as he came before me.

"This is the first time we've seen each other. I've heard many rumors about you, Marquis Bartofalt. First of all, I would like to thank you for saving my daughters."

Even though I am younger than him, I am the Marquis, so Count Roseblade's language is polite.

--I am troubled when adults use honorifics.

"T-Thank you for inviting me."

Starting with an awkward greeting, Deirdre-senpai offered a helping hand.

"Nevertheless, the surroundings of the Hero-dono are quite gorgeous"

"It's too good for me."

I managed to make a smile and reply.

It was still better to be a little sarcastic with someone you knew than to have a conversation with a bunch of important adults.

But then Count Roseblade starts joking.

"They say they prefer the color of hero. Isn't it still not enough for the Marquis?"

"No, it's more than enough?"

"That's not true. The blood of a new hero must be left behind. The third son of a baron is now a marquis after a great adventure. There is only one hero in the Kingdom of Horfalt who has risen to this level in a single generation. If you are such a hero, you are allowed to surround yourself with more people."

The Roseblade family also began as adventurers.

The reason he appreciates me is probably because I'm a successful adventurer.

Somehow, I feel like I'm being teased by my relatives about my love life, and it's making me nervous.

When I glance at the three of them, they are listening with a smile.

I guess they are not angered by this level of conversation.

“By the way, what do you think of our Deirdre?”

“Eh? I think she’s beautiful.”

I was asked about Deirdre-senpai, and all I could say was that she was beautiful.

She has gorgeous blonde hair in a vertical roll, and different from Ange, she looks great in a blue dress.

Deirdre-senpai opened her fan and covered her mouth.

“It’s a natural response”

Hearing my answer, Count Roseblade laughed heartily.

“My daughter is pleased to hear that, Hero-dono. Then, please enjoy today.”

Count Roseblade and the others are leaving.

I was relieved and sighed a little.

“Ah~, I’m so nervous”

[That was a rather awkward greeting. Did you shrink in the face of power?]

“I won’t deny it. I’m a small man, after all.”

Try to be funny, Luxion says, “Small people are more humble.”

However, Ange’s expression was a little grim.

Her lips are smiling, but her eyes are not smiling.

At the destination where her gaze is directed, there are Count Roseblade and Deirdre-senpai.

“The Roseblade family is too greedy”

“About what?”

I tilt my head at Ange, who is in a bad mood, and Noelle, who is now free of tension, confirms it. It was about the question I had just asked.

“That question, though, Leon got misunderstood. What about the fourth one? That’s what he meant, right?”

“ —— That is impossible, right.”

Whatever the circumstances may be, how about the daughter as the fourth? Is it something like that?

If it were me, I would never do that.

If there was a bastard with three beautiful women with good personalities, a man would be tempted to hit him out of jealousy.

And there’s another one there, I’ll never forgive him.

However, it seems that Livia had the same idea as the two.

“The Count’s eyes were very sharp for a moment, weren’t they? That was definitely not a joke.”

I’m sure Count Roseblade was pissed off when he saw me, “You’ve got three beautiful women with you.”

As a man myself, I understand that feeling.

“Isn’t it jealousy? If I saw a guy with three beautiful women, I’d wish in my heart that he would unlucky.”

Wishing for the other person’s misfortune will not make you happy.

I understand that, but I can’t help but be jealous.

—— Although I never thought I’d be on the receiving side of jealousy.

Then, as usual, Luxion was sarcastic.

[I don't feel you've grown at all since we met. Can you please betray my expectations a little bit in a good way?]

Sarcasm and cynicism are no longer an everyday conversation between us.

"I'll consider it when I feel like it. Where's Nix?"

I searched the area where my family was as we conversed, but Nix was the only one I couldn't find.

Ange tells me happily, unlike earlier.

"He must be cornered by now"

"Nix is cornered? W-Wait a minute!"

Moving from the party venue to the balcony, Nix took a deep breath and leaned back against the railing once he was free of his nervousness.

"I'm so nervous ~"

No matter what he ate or drank, he didn't know what it tasted like, he just felt uncomfortable.

He was tired of talking to noblemen who were not supposed to be involved in his life, and he did not want to participate in the event again.

"You were very active on the battlefield, but you're not very good at parties."

Nix scratches his cheek with his finger.

"I'm not used to this kind of place. Parties at my house are much more lively."

He said it was lively, but it was actually noisy.

It's the kind of party where manners are not a concern, and laughter and fights are a

common occurrence.

Nix hated it a little.

Even without making a fuss, he thought it was fine to go on as usual.

But once attending a real party, he misses the easygoing party.

“Did you participate in the school?”

“At that time, I had friends and some idiots who wanted to cut loose because they were students. Well, I thought it was a world that had nothing to do with a regular class.”

When talking about the school days, Dorothea showed a lonely expression.

“I like to be alone, and I don’t have many memories of that. Looking back, I should have talked to many more people. Then I wouldn’t have been in trouble at a time like this.”

“At a time like this?”

(What is she trying to say? Maybe she wants to be friends with me? No way)

After the worst face-to-face meeting she had ever had, there was no way she would want to be friends with him.

With that in mind, Nix waited for Dorothea’s words.

Perhaps Dorothea was nervous, her breathing was disordered.

Perhaps having made up her mind, she gave Nix a serious look and put her hand on her chest.

“Nix-sama, can you give me one more chance?”

“Chance? —Eh, chance means?”

Nix is surprised when he realizes, a few seconds late, what Dorothea is trying to say.

“I’m serious. I seriously like you. Please, give me one more chance.”

"No, *ano*? But I am, look! As I said before, I want a relaxed couple, and I don't think we have the same hobbies."

No matter how beautiful she is, Dorothea wanting someone as a pet is not Nix's hobby.

However, Dorothea was serious.

"The one who loves is the one who loses. I do not mind being your pet. No, I will be the wife Nix-sama wants me to be."

"I-I don't think you should force yourself like that. Endure is bad for the body."

(In the first place, I can't treat my marriage partner like a pet, impossible! My mind can't stand it!)

Nix tries to escape the situation, but unfortunately, this is the home of the Roseblade family—In the castle.

If he looks at the balcony doorway, he can see a figure behind the large glass window with the curtains closed.

Dorothea holds her hands, looks down, and cries.

"Then what should I do? What do I have to do to be accepted?"

"I-I think you'd better wipe your tears for now! And don't you think your family will forgive me for this? I've been rude to you."

"We are even, right? I also prepared a collar."

In a corner of his mind, Nix thought about it carefully, thinking, "What a terrible conversation".

He wondered why the woman in front of him was so obsessed with him?

"It's my first time"

"W-What is it?"

"I've never felt my heart beat so hard in my life, and I don't know what to do."

Nix's heart ached at the sight of an adult woman, who gave the impression of being cold, crying as if she were a child.

He couldn't stand to see her like that, so he hugged her and comforted her.

The moonlight made Dorothea look beautiful, or the way she was crying made him feel like he had to do something about it — Nix, who usually did his best as a big brother, couldn't leave her alone anyway.

When Dorothea was hugged, she froze in surprise.

Their heartbeats are rising.

“Etto”

Nix, who hadn't thought about what would happen next, was confused, but Dorothea hugged him and they spent some time on the balcony.



“What are you doing, aniki!”

I peeked over the balcony and opened my eyes wide at Nix, who was hugging Dorothea-san.

No matter how you look at it, this woman is not in Nix's type, so what was he thinking, hugging her willingly?

Livia, who was looking at the balcony, blushed and fidgeted.

“I-I didn't expect a hug out of the blue.”

When asked for her opinion, Noelle looked at Nix and Dorothea-san with a sparkle in her eyes.

“But it's ideal. It takes a lot of courage to confess to someone you like.”

Perhaps remembering her own time, Noelle's cheeks also turned red.

Ange stands next to me and looks at me sideways.

“I thought the brothers were alike, but Nix-dono made his own move. Leon could learn a thing or two from him.”

“It looks like he was just carried away by a momentary whim, though?”

It was impossible for Nix to move so boldly against a woman.

I make the prediction that there was some kind of magic going on and he wasn't making the usual decision.

Ange let out a small sigh of astonishment at me and turned her gaze to the back of us.

There was the Count Roseblade with a deliberate attitude.

“*Oya-oya*, Dorothea can not be underestimated. Unexpectedly, I never thought she'd have a man she liked.”

My parents come over because I was loud enough to be heard in the hall.

“Not Leon, but the Nix, don’t tell me?”

It’s understandable that they’re surprised to see a serious Nix hugging a woman, but how did my name come up there?

My mother touched her gaping mouth with her hand.

It seems that she is too surprised to react.

My father apologizes to Count Roseblade.

“I-I’m really sorry.”

I guess he feels sorry for hugging his precious daughter.

But Count Roseblade was calm.

“You can’t help but fall in love with the knight who saved you. I’ll leave the two of them alone for now.”

As Count Roseblade returned to the party with Dad and others, Ange crossed her arms.

“It’s so clear. He planned to leave them alone from the start.”

“Eh? Why would he do that?”

“Because Dorothea has fallen in love with Nix-dono.”

“With Nix? Didn’t we tell her the collar was a lie? Is there any reason for her to like him?”

When I say that it must be different from Dorothea’s hobby, the ladies give me a dumbfounded look that says, “You really don’t get it.”

It was Livia who told me about Dorothea-san’s feelings.

“Leon-san, there are many girls who yearn for a knight-sama who helps them.”

“I’ve heard that before, but”

Noelle hunched over and put the fingertips of both hands together, embarrassed.

“I understand~. If someone risked his life to come and save me, that would make me conscious.”

Noelle, who glances at me, seems to be remembering what happened in the Republic.

I think I did my best back then.

Then, Deirdre-senpai came over and joined the conversation.

“I also have experience. That was when we were attacked by the Principality’s army. That time, Leon-kun were so dependable.”

The person standing in front of Deirdre-senpai, who had just arrived, was Ange with her hands on her hips.

“What a coincidence. I also remember. Because even back then, Leon came to my rescue. But still, it’s an elaborate imitation.”

“What are you talking about?”

Deirdre-senpai, who was giving Ange a stern talking-to, was hiding her smirking face with an open fan.

“You nailed Claris, just in case, right. You deliberately moved so that Nix-dono and Dorothea would be together and led them to the balcony, didn’t you? The moon is beautiful today and the atmosphere is nice. Show a little weakness, and most men can’t resist hugging.”

“No way. Was it all an act?”

When I saw the two of them on the balcony, I knew Nix had been fooled.

However, Deirdre-senpai argues against it in order to protect Dorothea-san’s honor.

“I’m just giving them a chance to be alone. Anything beyond that is up to them. Acting, it is unthinkable.”

“Not acting? I-If so, is it okay?”

Luxion, who was next to me who was worried, seems not to be very interested in this topic.

[Isn't it possible that you are too much influenced by the opinions of others?]

“S-Shut up. I'm not good at this kind of thing.”

[Not just romance, there are many areas in which Master is not good.]

He is a guy who says a lot of words every time.

CHAPTER 7

COUNT ROSEBLADE

The next day.

Our family gathered in the castle's lounge, with Nix sitting on the couch with his hands on his head.

"Nix, what were you thinking, hugging an unmarried lady!"

Dad said in a panic, but if this was a normal woman, it wouldn't have been a problem.

The problem is that she is an unmarried daughter of a Count.

Nix makes an excuse for last night.

"You're wrong. I couldn't leave her alone. Besides, she looked so beautiful yesterday."

The family's eyes were cold as they looked at Nix, who said he couldn't leave her alone because she looked so weak.

The two cruel ones are Jenna and Finley.

"I'm sure it was all calculated, right?"

"Ah~, I know what you mean. It's like if you create an atmosphere, you win."

They seemed to think that Nix had fallen into Dorothea-san's trap.

In the first place, there was no way Nix could easily get close to the young Countess.

Jenna remembered last night's party.

"There were many things that were unnatural, right?"

Nix raised his face when he heard that words.

“If you knew it, tell me!”

“I’m not interested in your love life. Nevertheless, why our men are so popular? Leon’s like that, but I didn’t expect Nix to be the same. I wonder if the brothers have the constitution to be favored by unreachable ladies?”

Finley looks at Colin, who is sitting on the couch, tilting her head.

“Is Colin going to marry a somewhere young lady?”

“M-Married, I-I’m not particularly.”

Seeing Colin so flustered, Finley must have felt like teasing him.

She closed the distance and pointed her finger at the tip of Colin’s nose.

“It’s too much for little Colin, isn’t it? A wimp Colin is always hiding behind Noelle.”

“I’m not a wimp!”

When they were about to start fighting with each other, Mom pulled them apart.

“Don’t come to other people’s houses and start to fight. Why can’t our children be quiet?”

Jenna laughs at Finley, who is flustered.

“Fighting with Colin, you’re also a kid.”

“It’s proof that I am young~. Unlike onee-chan.”

“What!”

“It’s true, isn’t it? Yesterday, when you mentioned that you had just graduated from the school, all the men left. As for me, I’ve had a lot of good-looking guys come up to me when they learned I haven’t entered the school yet.”

“O-Only a blind man would choose childish Finley over me.”

“Isn’t it the other way around? The men who chose me, the one with a future, over my

sister, the one with no future.”

— If there was a daughter of a Baron and had just graduated from the academy, she would have been shunned because she was considered a terrible generation.

Not long ago, the daughters of barons and viscountesses carried around subhuman slaves as their exclusive servants.

That used to be the norm, but now values are changing.

No, is it more like correcting? Anyway, the situation is changing.

In the midst of all this, Finley is also preparing to enter school and will be a freshman when spring break is over.

I muttered, letting out a small sigh as I looked at Finley, who was glaring at Jenna.

“A little sister is terrible”

Finley is terrible, but she reminds me of my little sister, Marie, from a previous life.

In the Republic of Arzel, my inner evaluation of older sister has become “my sister who is not related to me by blood is a good person” thanks to Louise-san.

I looked at Jenna and saw that she was staring at Finley in a terrifying way.

When Mom saw this, she held her forehead with her hand as if her head hurt.

I can't help but say what I think.

“Can we trade Jenna with Louise-san?”

Hearing my true feelings, Luxion makes fun of me as usual.

[Didn't you say that the existence of a big sister was harmful? Do you think Louise is less harmful?]

“Looking at Louise-san, you would think onee-chan is not so bad, right? A gentle big-breasted big sister who spoils me is more than welcome.”

When I say this, remembering Louise-san, the sisters who stare at each other, but Jenna turns to me with a look of disgust on her face.

“You’re really disgusting. What do you want from a big sister?”

Am I sexually desiring a big sister? That’s how Jenna misunderstood me, and she distanced herself from me as she hugged herself.

You don’t have to hate it that much.

“Nobody’s looking at you sexually. Seeing you naked doesn’t turn me on one bit.”

[Then, what if the target was Louise?]

“It’s not something to be looked at sexually. You’re being too rude, if you see Louise-san naked.”

[It was Master who said that rude thing to your sister.]

“Isn’t this how you treat your own sister?”

When I laugh, my family looks at me in disgust, saying, “This guy again” However, when the topic of Louise-san came up, Mom’s gaze became stern.

Dad forced the topic back to Nix and started thinking about the future.

“Anyway, the Count closed his eyes at the time. Nix and I will go apologize to him, but you guys need to be quiet. Especially Leon!”

“Eh?”

“Don’t you dare make more noise. Listen, absolutely not!”

“I’m a quiet guy, basically. If anyone should be paying attention, it’s Jenna and Finley, right?”

When I turned to the troublesome sisters, they looked at me with a strange look on their faces, “What is this guy talking about?”.

“This foolish brother really doesn’t get it, does he.”

“We don’t act out of line like you do. Why don’t you take a look at yourself?”

They are really annoying sisters.

I changed my opinion about a big sister a little, but a little sister is still no good.

Thanks to Louise-san, I’ve come to accept the existence of a big sister — but for me, with Finley and Marie, a little sister is still a harmful thing.

I get up from the couch as Dad and Nix head off to apologize.

They give me a dubious look, so I suggest that I go with them.

“I’m going too. I’m still a Marquis, you know. Maybe this title will help a little?”

A marquis in name only, but it’s better than not being there to apologize.

After much concern, they allowed me to accompany them.

“I’m so happy to have a son-in-law like you!”

The meeting with Count Roseblade took place in a reception room in the castle.

This place, with its luxurious furniture, was quite glamorous, perhaps to show off the wealth of the Roseblade family.

In a luxurious room that would have made us poor Baron feel small — the Count Roseblade greeted us with a big smile on his face.

He spreads his hands toward Nix, but the person himself is confused or stunned for a moment before finally asking back.

“S-Son-in-law?”

“Since you accept Dorothea, didn’t you hug her on the balcony?”

Count Roseblade is smiling all the time, but his tone sounds like, “You put your hands on my daughter and you’re not gonna take responsibility?”.

When I look at Dad, he's too flustered to be useful.

"N-No, Count. A-Are you really going to make her marry me? I'm a nobleman from the countryside, and my rank is different from yours?"

In a world where the status system still exists, there are many troublesome rules for marriage.

Sometimes, in order to achieve a marriage of different status, some people give up their status and honor to elope and lose everything.

—By the way, it was the five idiots who did it for Marie.

Does that sound like a good story, if you ask me?

In their case, it's a terrible story, they've actually been tricked by Marie.

Marie, who tricked them, ended up having five unemployed people who didn't make enough money, which is funny.

However, there are always exceptions to everything.

Count Roseblade's gaze turned to me for a moment.

"Don't worry about it. Nix-kun's little brother, Leon-dono is a marquis. There is no one who would complain about the family of a hero who rose to become a marquis in a single generation."

Since I've been promoted to the rank of marquis, the title structure has become ambiguous.

I feel bad for Nix, so I talk to Count Roseblade.

"Can Dorothea-san live in the countryside? Unlike in the city, we're really in the rural area."

My dad and Nix both nodded repeatedly.

Can a daughter who grew up in the city live in the countryside?

The standard of living in this world is often very different even in the same country.

Like in the previous world, no matter where you live, you have access to electricity, gas, and water! This is not that blessed environment like that.

For that reason, the girls at the school hated the countryside nobles.

But the Count of Roseblade says not to worry.

"Dorothea is prepared for it. She says she'll live anywhere if she becomes Nix-kun's wife. If push comes to shove, the Roseblade family will be there to help."

They are going to support the Bartofalt family for their daughter.

That sounds great, but it's too convenient for us.

I know it's rude of me, but I can't help but ask Count Roseblade.

"That's very thoughtful of you. I can't help but wonder if there's something behind it."

I ask nervously, and Count Roseblade's guards, sensing my rudeness in asking, try to brace themselves.

However, Count Roseblade stopped them.

"It's important not to jump at a sweet deal. Because those who jump unguarded at the treasure in front of them will not live long. I'll give you credit for being cautious."

Apparently, he liked it.

Count Roseblade turned his back on us —— He looked a little concerned. He let out a small sigh and turned to look at us.

His expression was, what can I say, a troubled look.

"Since we're about to make a connection, there's no point in trying to hide it. In the first place, Nix-kun, do you know Dorothea's hobby, right?"

Nix remembers the collar and is troubled, but affirms it.

“Y-Yes, of course, I’ll never tell anyone about it.”

“It’s natural. You have to hide your family’s shame.”

The “family” part was strangely emphasized.

It’s as if he’s saying, “You are already a family member and a person who shares the secret.”

Nix says a lot of negative things about himself.

“I-I’m not quite up to par, and I’m not worthy of Dorothea-san. Besides, it’s Leon who’s amazing, not me.”

“It’s also important to admit your flaw. You’re a sincere and good man!”

“I don’t have any achievements or anything?”

“I’m buying your future. Besides, Nix-kun played an active role in defeating the sky pirates, didn’t you? You saved my daughters, too. You’ve achieved enough!”

“We are poor, and your daughter will have a hard time!”

“The Roseblade family will do everything in our power to support you, so don’t worry! If there’s anything you need, be it people, money, or goods, just let us know!”

“I’m a mediocre adventurer and I’ve never accomplished anything!”

Nix has become an adventurer at the school, but like me, he doesn’t have a clear track record of conquering dungeons or finding treasure.

For the Roseblade family, who consider the adventurer part to be important, Nix would be a problem before evaluation.

But still, Count Roseblade does not change his attitude.

“Do you want to go on an adventure? Then you should join the adventure we’re planning. I’m looking for a team to discover a new floating island. If you succeed, Nix-kun, you can take the credit.”

“N-No, that’s bad. I don’t think those things mean anything unless you accomplish them yourself.”

“What! Do you want to do it yourself? Nix-kun is also a good adventurer!”

No matter what he says, Count Roseblade will take it favorably.

Are they misunderstanding each other? No, this is different.

Luxion, who was floating by my side, seemed to have noticed Count Roseblade’s feelings.

[From the flow of the current conversation, I’d say that Count Roseblade really wants to get Master’s brother.]

“That’s right. Nix might not be able to get away.”

If I translate the words of Count Roseblade, he’s saying, “You’re the only one I won’t let go!”?

Nix was confused and very impatient, as if anything he said could be interpreted in any positive way.

Count Roseblade said to Nix.

“You’ll be staying with us for a while, right? In the meantime, you can get to know each other better. Someone, call Dorothea and have her show you around.”

“Ha”

When the knight went to call Dorothea, Dad, who had not been able to keep up with the conversation, finally opened his mouth.

“What am I supposed to do?”

That’s how I feel, too.

The courtyard of the Roseblade family castle.

While Nix was being shown around the castle by Dorothea-san, we were invited to tea by Deirdre-senpai.

Chairs and tables were set up in the courtyard to enjoy the tea prepared by the Roseblade family.

The tea and sweets were delicious, but the topic of conversation was still about Nix.

It wasn't a dark story, but it wasn't bright either.

"I think Nix is already finished?"

Many people who attended the party saw Nix and Dorothea-san hugging each other.

I'm sure many people have heard the stories.

Are they about to get married? And other rumors.

In the first place, when the Roseblade family came to the Bartofalt family, it was known to those with sharp ears.

Claris-senpai, who had been kept stuck in the party, looked a little dissatisfied.

"The Roseblade family are rude to their benefactors, aren't they? The Atley family sent out airships and troops to help Deirdre-senpai, but this is cruel treatment."

She seemed annoyed that she was being kept busy, but she was not angry.

Deirdre-senpai laughs and accepts sarcasm.

"Isn't it you who meddled in the matter between the Bartofalt family and us? You've been asked to probe into my parents' home, haven't you?"

Picking up the cup, Claris-senpai took a sip of tea without answering.

The atmosphere is not stiff, but I'm tired, they try to find out each other's real intentions, so I'll return the talk.

"I'm sorry to do this in front of you, Deirdre-senpai, but if aniki refuses to get married, I'll support him."

If Nix really didn't want it, I was going to help him turn down the marriage.

Even though she heard of my decision, Deirdre-senpai didn't blame me one bit.

"In other words, if he accepts, you won't object, right? What about Angelica? Are you going to interfere?"

When everyone's eyes were on Ange, she quietly set down her cup.

"I'll go along with Leon's opinion. However, if you touch Leon — I won't show any mercy, even if it's you. Deirdre, you'll have to bear with just taking in the Bartofalt family. Claris too, don't get your hopes up. — I'm seriously saying it."

Ange's red eyes were glowing like red jewels, intimidating the two of them.

However, both Deirdre and Claris didn't seem to be fazed at all.

Both of them smiled and didn't answer anything.

The only thing that bothered me was that my name was mentioned.

"Luxion, why did my name come out?"

[The thoughtless Master is a kind of a healing presence in this place. I mean, the atmosphere in this place is so bad that a being like Master would be healing.]

I can't grasp the situation, and Luxion is sarcastic with me.

It's always happening, so I decided to start over.

"I'm a simple young man, so I'm not good at finding out someone's real intentions. But you're good at it, aren't you?"

[What do you mean?]

"Because you are an artificial intelligence with a black heart."

[I'm no match for Master. And how can you call yourself simple?]

When Luxion and I started talking, Ange let out a small sigh.

"Since Leon seems to be bored, this conversation is over. We'll leave the two of them to their own business, and watch them from the outside."

She said she could leave the decision to Nix and the others to decide, but as a nobleman, would that be okay?

As for me, I appreciate Ange's opinion.

However, the noble society I'm imagining seems to be very strict about marriage, though?

It's actually a lot of trouble to go through.

I got Luxion, went wild, and before I knew it, I had made a big name for myself, so I was able to ignore those troublesome ties.

So I assumed that it was usually much harder.

Well, there are other ties outside the marriage, and it's a real hassle.

"You don't care either way? Marriage among the nobility is pretty loose."

Ange narrowed her eyes.

"Your relationship can be special, too. Rather than that, can we talk about something fun? Since Leon doesn't like black-hearted talk, I'd like to have fun with other topics."

Ange wants to change the subject for me, but isn't that a little bit sarcastic towards Deirdre-senpai and Claris-senpai?

Also, is it an expectation for me who was just saying 'un-un' when they probe each other?

Then Livia clapped her hands.

"Then I want to hear about the story of the floating island!"

What Livia talked about was the search for a new floating island.

"Leon-san told me that the Roseblade family is looking for a new floating island, right?"

Is it that easy to find a floating island?"

When questioned by Livia, Deirdre-senpai said, "It's not easy," before explaining in detail.

"It's hard to discover continents now. Once we find a reasonably large floating island, we can move it and connect it to expand our land."

"Even a small floating island is very large, isn't it? Can you really move it? I've never seen one in person, and I still can't believe it."

"We'll be using magic to manipulate and move the floating stones that make the land float. However, it's also very difficult to move. If it fails, it could be a serious accident."

The land of this world floats because of the existence of gravity-defying ores called floating stones.

With it, you could easily build an airship.

After all, the floating force is always available.

Now, all we need is to get the propulsion and we can get the airship moving.

Deirdre-senpai talks about the difficulty of finding a floating island.

"It doesn't mean that any floating island is acceptable. It doesn't matter what kind of floating island it is, because it doesn't make any sense to bring an empty wasteland floating island and connect it. If it's a rough, rocky floating island, it's rather easy to find. What we want is a floating island with rich soil."

Clarisse-senpai, who was listening to the conversation, told me how to use the rough, rocky floating island.

"If it's a deserted floating island, you can make a lot of money by digging up the floating stones and selling them. Besides, there are other ores to be found on those floating islands. It all depends on how you use it, I think?"

"If it were easy, we wouldn't have any trouble. We'll have to dig around and examine the rocky floating island, and if we don't find anything, it will be a great loss."

Perhaps interested in their conversation, Ange joins them.

"If it costs so much to transport them, why don't we just send in a research team?"

Deirdre-senpai rejected Ange's suggestion that they should send a survey team and carry the resources when they are discovered.

"How many supplies do you think it would take to run a group of that size through an empty wasteland? If there's nothing there, we'll end up in the red even if we recover the floating stones."

"It's worth a try. Even if you fail a few times, once you succeed, there's a chance you'll be in the black, right? As long as we end up in the black, there's no problem."

The three of them went straight into the fun, but Livia, who had asked the question, was having trouble speaking up.

I'll talk to her instead.

"What got you interested in the floating islands?"

"Noelle-san was concerned about a lot of things. Look, she said it would be a pity to leave the sapling-chan in the pot forever"

I looked at Noelle sitting in her wheelchair, she had just finished her tea and was putting the cup down.

I guess she heard me and Livia talking about why she was interested in the floating island.

"That's right. But the location of the planting site is important, so I thought that if there was a floating island with good conditions, that would be a good place."

Sapling-chan will definitely create a concession problem in the future, so the location of the planting will be important.

My parents' house is also a problem.

It wouldn't be funny if in the future, me and Nix—our children and grandchildren would be fighting over the rights to Sapling-chan.

[I have already surveyed and picked up a few locations of floating islands.]

“Eh? Is that so?”

[Yes. We also have to prepare a new territory for Master.]

“That’s right. Because I gave my utopia to the kingdom.”

The floating island with the hot springs, which was supposed to be my territory, was given to the kingdom to keep Marie and the others under house arrest.

Because of them, I lost the place where I could live the ideal slow life that I made Luxion prepare for me.

When I was talking with Livia and Noelle, I feel that Deirdre-senpai and Claris-senpai glancing at us.

Luxion gave them both a single look.

I was curious about Luxion’s behavior as he looked at them silently, so I asked him why.

“Why are you looking at them?”

[— It’s nothing]

.

Meanwhile.

At that time, Nix was sitting on a bench with Dorothea in a different courtyard from Leon and the others.

They were sitting side by side, with a gap of about three fists between them.

“He’s really giving me a hard time!”

“Well”

It was Nix, but before he knew it, he was complaining to Dorothea.

Before she knew it, he was revealing his normal appearance and speaking in a broken tone.

"In the school, he does whatever he wants, and me, his older brother, is looked at negatively! I'm treated like the big brother of the fiend. They're wrong! I'm normal! He's the only one in our family who's different!"

"That must have been hard for you?"

"— The boys hate me for being Leon's brother, and the girls are scared of me. And on top of that, I can't even get married because Leon has a strange promotion."

Being Leon's older brother is a lot harder for Nix to deal with.

Nix's good nature shows when he doesn't think about taking advantage of his brother's position.

Dorothea touched Nix's hand nervously.

"I-If it were me, I wouldn't let such a reputation mislead me."

"Dorothea-san"

It was Nix, who squeezed her hand and blushed.

"That aniki, isn't dissatisfied at all?! I can't believe you're enjoying your date after making people so worried."

I ordered Luxion to check on the two of them.

The women were intrigued by the image of the two projected on the table.

Deirdre-senpai is wiping her tears with her fingertips.

"That onee-sama is having a normal date. If it were the old onee-sama, she would have put a collar on the gentleman and taken him around."

Apparently, just having a normal date was enough to make him an animal of sorts, but

I couldn't help but point it out.

"Didn't Deirdre-senpai also say that you wanted to make me your pet, right?"

It was on the way back from a school trip when we encountered the Principality.

However, Ange, who did not know about this story, glared at Deirdre-senpai.

"I hadn't even heard of it."

When Ange sees Livia, she tell her everything without concealment.

"Indeed, she did say that. When Leon-san said that he couldn't abandon Ange, but he didn't care about the others, she said she liked his bold attitude."

"I-Is that so? U-Umu, that's not good."

When Ange heard Livia's explanation, she glanced at me and blushed.

-- Stop it. I'm embarrassed, too.

At that time, I was so impatient to save Ange that I said some lines that I normally wouldn't have said.

Livia was smiling when she saw me hiding my face with my hands.

"Men yearn to be a knight who saves the princess for once, don't they? That's what Leon-san said, and tried his best to save Ange."

When I fall silent, Ange clears her throat in embarrassment.

"Hmm! That's enough of that, Livia. Leon's having trouble."

"That's right. But Leon-san looked really wonderful at that time."

Seeing me blushing, both Deirdre-senpai and Claris-senpai gave Livia a sharp look.

If someone flirts in front of you, you might get angry.

Noelle raised his voice when she saw movement in the image.

"Ah, they're holding hands! Isn't Nix-san happy? They seem to be a perfect match no matter how you look at it."

Livia, who was happily watching the two of them, agreed with Noelle.

"That's right. The two of them seem to be having some fun."

I raised my head and looked at Nix, who looked happy and I envied him.

I have my own lovely fiancées, but I envy Nix, who is facing one woman.

To me, who has been tied to multiple women, a pure love like Nix's looks dazzling.

— Let's be clear.

I have no regrets about my current situation.

But I also envy Nix.

Then Luxion makes a decisive statement.

[Both their heart rates and body temperatures are rising rapidly.]

"Luxion, tell me clearly. And what's that supposed to mean?"

[They're getting excited]

"Something like hate, no feeling like that, right?"

[I judge it highly unlikely]

"— I see"

Everyone who was listening to the conversation between me and Luxion had a look on their face that said, "There are better ways to say that".

No matter how we mended it, all the data proved that Nix was overjoyed.

Not too long ago, he was complaining that he wasn't good enough for her, that she didn't have the right personality for him, and now he's excited about her.

What is he?

“Despite the fact that you have been complaining a lot, you still fall easily for a beautiful woman. I was going to lend you a hand if you were going to refuse, but I don’t care anymore.”

When I show a throwaway attitude, Luxion confirms.

[Then, do you agree with him marrying Dorothea?]

“Because he looks happy”

In the video, Nix looked like he and Dorothea-san were just an innocent couple.

I get out of my seat and leave.

[Where are you going?]

“At Dad’s and Mom’s. I was thinking to tell them that aniki seemed to get along well with Dorothea-san. I’m sure they’ll feel a little better when they hear that.”

He’s really a troublesome big brother.

When Nix parted from Dorothea and returned to the room, he found that Count Roseblade was there for some reason, even though the room was used by the Bartofalt family.

“My son!”

Then he walks over to Nix and calls him a son.

“Count? Eh, why are you here?”

As Count Roseblade approached Nix, he grasped Nix’s right hand with both hands and shook it up and down.

“I’ve heard the story. I’m glad you’ve finally made up your mind.”

" -- Ha?"

Nix was surprised, but the family around him applauded as they surrounded him.

His parents were teary-eyed and happy.

"Nix, I won't complain if it's your choice."

"D-Dad?"

"I'm worried that you won't get along with the daughter of the Count, but you've always been reliable, I rest assured? Nix, congratulations."

"Mom?! What are you talking about?!"

Count Roseblade speaks happily to Nix, who can't grasp the situation.

"I've heard from Marquis — Leon-dono. If you're not dissatisfied, tell me first. But you must be sincere and a bit reserved. As the father of my daughter, I feel safe."

"N-No, I haven't said anything about accepting her yet, though?"

The conversation was lively, and it was true that he was not dissatisfied.

However, he never talked about accepting the marriage.

Besides, it was unlikely that anyone had heard their conversation.

(How did they know I was having a good time?)

Count Roseblade, who had been smiling at the confused Nix, narrowed his eyes.

His hands were clenched together, and his hands were making creaking sounds.

"Are you dissatisfied with my daughter?"

"I-I don't think so. But I'm not sure I was worthy."

(I think she's a charming person, but I don't think her personality matches mine)

Count Roseblade smiles again.

"Then no problem. I assure you that you are worthy of my daughter!"

He had the attitude that he would not let anyone complain.

How could this be happening? Nix asked himself, and then he saw Leon in his vision, grinning and applauding.

(D-Don't tell me, this guy ?!)

Nix asks Leon.

"Leon, are you the mastermind?"

"Mastermind? What are you talking about? I just told Dad and Mom about it because you seemed to be getting along. And then they said, if it's Nix's decision"

"How did you know we were getting along? You weren't there, were you?!"

It was Luxion who answered about it.

[I reported it. Incidentally, judging from your heart rate, body temperature, and facial expressions, I judged that you two were in a state of excitement and reported that as well.]

"Luxion, did you help him too! Stop Leon like you always do!"

[From a third party's point of view, the big brother-kun is now in love with Dorothea. Angelica and the others are all in agreement, so I'm sure of it. Shall I show you the change in your heart rate when she held your hand? You were very excited about Dorothea, weren't you?]'

Didn't it make you throb when she held your hand? Even Nix was embarrassed when he heard that.

"There's a proper way to say it, right!"

Count Roseblade, who was listening to the conversation, grinned.

“Did Dorothea excite you? As a father, I have mixed feelings about this, but it doesn’t change the fact that you have affection for my daughter. Let’s begin the engagement process right away.”

“M-My mental preparedness is”

Dumbstruck by Nix’s lack of understanding, Leon let out a sigh and said.

“Aniki is *hetare*.” (*TLN: Which one is suited for this? Wimp? Wuss? Coward? Chicken?*)

Nix thought.

(Don’t want to be told by you, this *hetare* guy!)

Ange, Livia, and Noelle — who were watching the situation, and the family, thought and then Luxion was speaking for them.

[That’s not something Master can say.]

CHAPTER 8

THE TRUTH ABOUT SAPLING-CHAN

Dorothea was sitting on her bed in her room, looking up at the ceiling.

She just gave Nix a tour of the castle, but her heart was still beating fast.

Did I do well? Did he hate me?

Thinking about it like that sometimes makes her feel irresistibly embarrassed.

Remembering the small mistakes, she regrets why she did what she did there.

As she was alone with her thoughts, there was a knock at the door and she was startled.

“W-Who is it?”

“Onee-sama, it’s Deirdre.”

“It’s open”

She straightened her posture and allowed Deirdre to enter the room as if nothing had happened.

Deirdre entered the room and had a big smile on her face.

“I have good news for you, onee-sama. They’re in talks to become formally engaged.”

“Hahe?”

Dorothea makes a strange noise when she hears the word “engagement,” but Deirdre approaches her and holds her hand.

“There are still some formalities to be completed, but I’m pretty sure the engagement is confirmed.”

“W-Why? Ano, did Nix-sama say anything?”

There was no talk of an engagement when she showed him around the castle.

Therefore, she thought that she had failed.

However, when she heard that the engagement was confirmed, she was upset.

Deirdre thanked Dorothea.

“I haven’t heard from him in person yet. Onee-sama will have to confirm that directly.
— And congratulations.”

“T-Thank you”

“Anyway, onee-sama is getting married, huh? I thought if things went badly, you wouldn’t marry anyone. So, what are you going to do about the collar? Your partner doesn’t like collars very much, and I wouldn’t recommend it”

“Ara?”

Perhaps expecting a surprising reaction, Deirdre seemed to be concerned about Dorothea’s change of heart.

So Deirdre tells her why she doesn’t need a collar.

“I realized that we could still connect even without it.”

Deirdre shrugs her shoulders.

“Is it love?”

“I guess you could say that.”

(If there’s a connection stronger than a chain —)

Dorothea didn’t answer clearly, but she had come to want to have a connection that was stronger than chains.

“You betrayed me, this *hetare* bastard!”

On the deck of the Einhorn, I was grabbed in the chest by Nix.

“You were so happy to be alone with her! Everyone said he was definitely in love with her!”

Ange and the others said so, so there must be no doubt.

They seemed to get along so well that it was irritating even to me.

However, it seems that Nix can’t tolerate the fact that everyone was watching him.

“Everyone?! You were all watching us! A bad hobby also has a limit!”

“I was worried about aniki. And yet, you look like you’re enjoying it”

It’s fun to see them in trouble, but why I must see the two of them having so much fun?

“You’re more fortunate than I am, why are you so narrow-minded!”

“I am open-minded, and I think I encouraged aniki to get married! I should be praised for not pulling your leg.”

If I was really jealous, I wouldn’t have pushed it.

I wanted Nix to be happy, so I went out of my way to bring them together, even though they didn’t suit each other.

And yet, to call me narrow-minded is upsetting.

[Both of you, they’re sending us off.]

Nix lets go of me and tenses up in front of the person who appears.

His face was red, and no matter how you looked at him, he was conscious of her.

The same goes for the other party.

Dorothea-san also looked nervous and looked down when she came in front of Nix.

“Nix-sama. A-Ano, I’ll definitely visit you in the near future.”

“Ah, yes. I-I’ll be waiting for you.”

They are both stuttering their words.

As it was, they finished their conversation and Dorothea left, but she kept turning around and waving to Nix.

Deirdre, who had also come to see us off, looked at them smiling.

“They are really pure. Watching them makes me embarrassed.”

“Even he has been complaining about everything, he gets nervous when he is in front of her.”

When I cursed at Nix, Luxion, who was by my side, shook his one eye from side to side and showed his astonishment.

[Master was more trouble than your brother.]

“That’s not true “

[Then why don’t you ask Angelica and the others? Angelica, please tell us your impressions.]

Ange, called by Luxion, looks at me and crosses her arms.

“Leon was more troublesome. You didn’t make it clear until the very end. If we hadn’t had a surprise engagement ceremony, you would have run away forever, wouldn’t you”

“I-I don’t think so.”

When I weakly denied it, Ange said, “I wonder,” and looked at Livia.

[Then, please tell us Livia’s opinion.]

Livia speaks, choosing her words carefully.

“That’s right. I’m not sure if he’s a *hetare* or not, but I think Leon-san is more

troublesome. In the end, we were the ones who confessed. But I don't regret that we mustered up the courage to confess."

I tried to say something back, but the words wouldn't come out.

Thinking about it, I might have been worse than Nix.

[Because Master is too much of a glorifier of your past self, so you must have forgotten how pathetic you were. Does Noelle have an opinion about that?]

Noelle, who had been asked to speak, looked at me with a frown.

"I do, but why don't you apologize to Nix-san first?"

Everyone's eyes were on Nix, but he was still looking at Dorothea-san and waving at her.

-- I don't know why Nix can insist that he is not in love.

Deirdre-senpai, "Ara-Ara" looked satisfied at the sight of them.

"Then I will go too."

As the Deirdre senior exits the ship, Jenna, who was watching the smitten Nix, shrugs her shoulders and lets out a big sigh.

"He is so lovestruck, I can't believe it."

Finley also looked at Nix and shook her head, saying he's pathetic.

"I think the heat will die down soon enough."

Jenna agreed with Finley's opinion, and the two of them got into a lively discussion about the future of Nix.

"You think so too? Right now he's carried away by the heat and meek, but soon he's gonna come out of his shell and be just like he was in the beginning."

"You can't hide your true nature forever. I think aniki will be dominated in a few months."

"I've heard that once you're married, the rough edges of your partner suddenly start to show, so isn't it sooner?"

Nix turns and yells at the two who talk with no dreams or hopes.

"Can't you guys talk about something more positive!"

"Isn't it a realistic and dependable story? If Nix is prepared now, you won't get hurt. You should be thanking us."

Jenna's realistic talk left me and Nix speechless.

That's why, in a fit of anguish, I blame Jenna and Finley.

"If you're a girl, you'd be lovelier if you dreamed more."

The two of them looked at each other and snickered at my opinion.

"W-What is it?"

Jenna and Finley were laughing, covering their mouths with their hands.

"I just thought Leon, who's more insecure about his future than Nix, should see some reality."

"Aniki should worry about yourself."

That attitude and expression were annoying.

As siblings fussed over each other, Dad and Mom put their hands on their hips and let out a deep sigh.

Spring break is just around the corner.

There was one problem that needed to be taken care of before heading to the school.

It's a place to plant sapling-chan.

[Taking into account Yumeria's request, I have selected a floating island to plant a sapling of the sacred tree.]

Luxion took me to a floating island that was, no matter how you looked at it, deserted.

The land was covered with rocks and sand as far as the eye could see, and it didn't look like a place that was suitable for plants.

"Are you sure this is the right place? Isn't this land unsuitable considering what we've seen?"

We arrived early in the morning at the newly discovered floating island by using Einhorn.

I rub my sleepy eyes and yawn. The sky was still dark.

"Was it necessary for us to come at this hour?"

[You complain a lot. Given our plans for the day, this was the best time.]

According to Luxion's plan, if we plant at this time, we will be able to complete our schedule today without any problems.

It was Yumeria-san who pushed the wheelchair Noelle was in.

Noelle holds the sapling in her lap.

Noelle looked around and was just as anxious as I was.

"Are you sure you want to plant it here? If it withers, we'll be in big trouble."

Encouraging the worried Noelle was a confident-looking Yumeria-san.

Her large breasts were pushed up, making them look even more pronounced.

My drowsiness woke up instantly, and when I looked there, Ange, who was standing next to me, lightly nudged me with her elbow on my side.

"It hurts"

“Pull yourself together. The only thing you’re allowed to look at is our chests.”

“Eh, am I allowed to see that?”

“It’s fine”

My mind was still not awake, so I took a bite out of Ange’s suggestion.

But when I was told I could look, I couldn’t help but get cold feet.

Being embarrassed makes me excited, but on the other hand, I have trouble reacting when she’s so bold.

“It’s morning. So, I’ll pass.”

“Even if it was night, you’d still refrain.”

I finished my conversation with Ange and turned my attention back to Yumeria-san.

Yumeria-san is taking a hoe and digging up the area where the sapling-chan will be planted.

From an amateur’s point of view, it doesn’t look like a good place to plant a tree.

After all, there was no water nearby. Livia anxiously asks me.

“Is it really okay? I don’t think it’ll grow up here.”

“I think so, too. Luxion, are you sure it’s safe?”

When I asked him about the obvious problem, I got a surprising answer from Luxio.

[My judgment is in line with Yumeria’s.]

“Eh?”

[The sapling of the sacred tree will grow in this land. Don’t you remember? The sacred tree is a plant that grows by absorbing the magic element — magic power in the air. Water and soil are important, but more than that, if there is magic power, it will grow.]

According to Luxion, a minimum of water and soil is all that is needed.

“Sapling-chan is amazing”

[It's a stubborn plant]

“There are better ways to say that.”

While we were talking, Yumeria-san got ready.

When she receives sapling-chan from Noelle, she will plant the tree.

Yumeria-san's large breasts swayed every time she moved.

I looked at her for a moment, and Cordelia-san, who was standing behind Ange, coughed.

” —— Marquis, your gaze is too obvious.”

“It's the nature of men. It's unconsciousness. There's nothing I can do about it.”

I make a pathetic excuse, and Livia puts her hand on her cheek and gives me a troubled look.

“Boys is always like that. They look at chests and buttocks.”

[Especially Master is particularly focused on a woman's chests.]

“Oi!”

[Are you embarrassed to be found out? No problem. People already know that Master's eyes are always directed at the chests.]

“Eh?”

I looked around at the people here, and they all nodded.

[Master's gaze is blatant. It may be right for a creature to be faithful to its sexual desires, but let's learn to be modest as human beings. I understand that you prefer women with large breasts, but please stop embarrassing yourself.]

“Why should I be lectured by you?”

This artificial intelligence, he naturally reveals his master's sexual preference, you should hide it better?!

“It's done!”

When the dirt-stained Yumeria-san shouted out to us to let us know, Sapling-chan was planted in the devastated ground.

Even looking at it this way, I get worried because it doesn't look like it will grow.

“Shouldn't we give it water and nutrients?”

“This child is strong. So, it'll be fine.”

“Strong child?”

Yumeria-san put down her tools and bent down in front of Sapling-chan.

“It's a strong child that has endured in a harsh environment for a long time. In an environment that provides little or no nutrition, it has survived all these years by clamping itself to the sapling and slowing its growth.”

Yumeria-san's words were as if she had seen Sapling-chan all the time.

“Do you know that much?”

“Hm~m, I feel like I can hear the voice, I think? Actually, this child should be much bigger than that.”

Luxion who heard that approaches Sapling-chan.

[It's an amazing plant.]

Yumeria-san stood up, put her hands on her hips, and said something outrageous.

“That's why this is where it'll grow up!”

When Noelle heard that, she tilted her head.

“You mean it’s going to grow up nicely, right?”

“You’re wrong. This is where it will return to its true form.”

“Is that possible?”

Noelle was surprised, but so were we.

However, Yumeria-san is one of the elves who can use a special kind of magic.

When it comes to plants, she can be a real expert.

“Leave it to me. Here I go ~”

After saying that, Yumeria-san started dancing around Sapling-chan.

The dance was rather comical.

“What is that dance?”

I ask, and Yumeria-san answers while dancing.

“It’s a dance I made myself. I worked very hard to get it back to its original form. Strong child-rearing, keep growing! Strong child-rearing, keep growing!”

She danced with Strong child-rearing and calling it.

The movement was rather intense, and her large breasts swayed.



“O~oh! Tte, Arere?”

I was so mesmerized that I couldn't help but speak out loud, and then my vision was blocked and it became pitch black.

All I hear is Luxion's voice.

[You never really learn]

It was Ange and Livia, standing on either side of me, who blocked my view.

Two people were blocking my view from both sides with their hands.

“Y-You're wrong! As an employer, I was just checking on how my workers were doing!”

I make an excuse that shows my ulterior motive, such as I wanted to watch Yumeriasan dance for a little longer.

But the two of them did not permit me.

Livia whispers in my ear.

“We will keep an eye on it for you, so don't worry”

I can hear Ange's voice from the other side.

She breathed into my ear, and I felt a little throbbed.

“Yumeria is working well. Leon, you don't have to worry about anything.”

For some reason, their gentle but somewhat charming voices were also a little scary.

They seem a little angry.

” — Are you two angry? Did I make you angry?”

When I was anxious, the two of them suddenly pulled their hands away from me who is surprised.

For some reason, I felt a blinding light and closed my eyelids tightly.

Soon the strong light disappeared and I was able to open my eyes and saw the grown-up appearance of Sapling-chan.

No, it's not a sapling.

It is already about the size of a young tree.

It's a little taller than I am.

"How did it grow so fast in such a short time?"

The young tree, its glossy green leaves swaying in the wind, had the same leaf shape as the sapling-chan.

I was amazed that the tree had grown so fast in such a short time, and Yumeria-san was smiling and wiping the sweat off her face from dancing.

"This is the original appearance of this child."

To my surprise, Noelle approached by herself in a wheelchair to see Sapling-chan --- Though it was already a young tree, she touched the sacred tree.

When Noelle touches it with her right hand, the crest on the back reacts by emitting a faint green light.

I also felt my right hand getting hot, and when I checked it, I saw that the crest had appeared.

Noelle, who touched the sacred tree, smiled and shed a tear.

"As Yumeria-chan says. This child is much stronger than I thought. I see, that was an unnecessary worry."

Will it grow in such a wasteland? I was worried like that, but it seems that it will grow without problems.

I feel the power from the sacred tree.

I approached Noelle and put my hand on her back, and she cried for a while, probably because she remembered her hometown.

I guess she was still feeling lonely away from her hometown.

Noelle swears to the sacred tree.

"I have to be strong, too. I'll protect you properly this time."

Noelle is a survivor of the Lespinasse House, which once betrayed the Sacred Tree.

Noelle is going to protect the sacred tree this time -- She was determined to lead correctly.

Yumeria-san was flustered and comforted Noelle.

"This child is strong and kind, and I'm sure it'll understand how you feel. So, *etto* -- please don't cry."

" --Yes"

Noelle wiped away her tears, but still didn't stop.

CHAPTER 9

THE YOUNGEST SON COLIN

At that time, Colin woke up early in the morning and was wandering around the mansion of the Bartofalt family, looking for someone.

“Are? Where’s Noelle-neechan?”

When he comes to the living room, Finley is there, and when he asks where Noelle is, she answers him but looks displeased.

“She went out early this morning with *aniki*.”

“Eh~, wake me up too.”

“I don’t know”

The unfriendly Finley was still looking a little sleepy.

Jenna, the eldest, hadn’t woken up yet, and Finley was quieter than usual because of the absence of her tense older sister.

Maybe she’s bored, but she talks to Colin, who is waiting for Noelle to return.

“More importantly. Colin, you need to stop following Noelle-san around.”

“Why?”

When Colin did not understand the meaning of the words, Finley gave him a blunt order without telling him the details.

“You don’t have to know why. You just have to keep my word. ——Understand?”

Colin raised an eyebrow in annoyance at Finley’s remarks.

“No. Don’t tell me what to do.”

“Just stay away from her.”

“Why?”

“It doesn’t matter what”

Finley was definitely not going to tell him why.

That was what Colin found so annoying.

He felt like he was being ridiculed for being the youngest, and most importantly, Noelle was the ideal sister for him.

She’s kind and seems to enjoy playing with Colin.

She had become more important to Colin than Jenna and Finley.

“Absolutely no way. I’m going to play with Noelle-neechan again today. Besides, she’s going to Royal Capital soon, right? I won’t be able to see her for a while.”

Before he wouldn’t see her again, Colin was going to have a lot of fun with her.

To Colin, Finley showed a complicated expression—Perhaps she gave up, she let out a sigh.

“Do what you want. Whatever happens, I don’t care.”

“I don’t need Finley-neechan to tell me what to do~”

After saying that, Colin waited for Noelle to return.

Spring break is just around the corner.

In a few days, I have to return to school and start preparing for the new semester.

“Are Marie and the others doing well? Is there any report?”

I ask Luxion about the situation of Marie and the others, but he gives me the same

answer as usual.

[There are no abnormalities at this time. Although Creare's solo actions have been conspicuous, Marie has been actively investigating the school. I judge that there is no problem.]

They are investigating, but the current situation is that there is no special information.

Still, when I heard that Marie was doing her best to gather information by following my instructions, I felt more worried than relieved.

"Is Marie serious about gathering information. I thought she'd be a little more relaxed about it."

[Isn't that better?]

"I'll forgive you if she plays a little. I thought if I told her a little harder, she'd be moderately loosened up and have a good time."

Marie is working more diligently than I expected.

So, I reflected that I had been a little too intimidating.

I'm sure she would have liked to relax more during spring break.

[Marie must have been affected by the incident in the Republic of Arzel.]

"That's right. That girl was opposed to Lelia becoming a priestess until the very end."

Noelle's twin sister, Lelia, was a reincarnated person like us.

Lelia did what she wanted, which caused some problems, but in the end, she herself became a priestess instead of Noelle and remained in the Republic of Arzel.

She lost the man she loved and chose to live as a symbol of the Republic of Arzel.

Though it may sound enviable, the reality is much harsher than you might imagine.

As a priestess, she would be treasured, but it would not be easy to live as a symbol of the country.

Marie was angry that she couldn't understand why Lelia chose such a position for herself.

We had a lot of things to reflect on, and many times I wished we had done better.

Marie must have regretted it.

“So, how are the five idiots?”

[Same as ever. I thought they had grown up, but the big minus just got closer to zero, so they are still negative.]

Luxion's opinion of the Five Idiots is low.

I thought things had gotten somewhat better in the Republic, but what have they done?

“What did they do?”

[About Julius, he was raising livestock hidden on the school grounds. He even prepared a shed and kept chickens in it.]

“To make skewers?”

[Yes. He was called out and given a sermon, and is now under house arrest, but is eager to keep the farm. By the way, Master has been billed for compensation for the damage he caused to the school grounds.]

“Why?”

[Because Roland turned the bill over to Master.]

“Both father and son are troubling me. For now, I will hit Julius.”

[That's very kind of you. And next is Brad.]

Wait a minute? Don't tell me, there is a report for each person?

Even though I haven't received any important reports from Marie, isn't it awful that all I get are bad reports about five idiots?

[He has taken the liberty of setting up a spectacle at school. We've received a bill from the school for repairs.]

"Did they charge me because Brad too?"

[Yes. He prepared an unfamiliar tent, which collapsed and caused damage to the school. Brad is Master's subordinate, and as a result, Master has been asked to bear the cost of repairs.]

"Is it any better than before?"

[By the way, both Julius and Brad caused less damage.]

" —— Oi, are there any idiots that caused more problems?"

[Please rejoice. All of them caused trouble without fail. Only Marie, Kara, and Kyle have been quiet.]

"I'm not rejoicing at all"

In other words, Greg, Chris, and Jilk have also done something.

"What did the other three do?"

[About Greg, he renovated his room without permission from the school. According to him, he wanted to turn his room into a training room.]

"Get permission, the permission!"

[And since he did the renovations himself, he made a lot of mistakes.]

It seems that an amateur had messed with it poorly and ruined a lot of things.

Of course, the school refused to convert it into a training room. They decided to return it to its pre-renovation state.

This is why the repair costs were incurred, but the five idiots' pocket money couldn't cover it, so the bill came to me.

"What about Chris?"

[— The school's bath was dirty, he said and he renovated it without permission. For this, a bill for the renovation has been sent to Master.]

The school was also a little happy that Chris had reformed all the bathrooms on his own. It seems that there is no intention of going back to the way it was before the renovation.

However, he has no intention of paying for it.

So the money for the renovation came to me, Chris's boss.

They don't have the ability to pay for it. — So why did they decide to remodel?

"Didn't they just learn the value of money in the Republic? Have they already forgotten it?"

[Chris's excuse is that he was going to pay eventually. I guess he thought he could postpone the payment.]

"Is he stupid?"

[Definitely an idiot. About the last one—]

"The worst person I don't want to hear is the last one."

All of them were too much, but it still made sense.

Normally, this would be impossible, but knowing how bad the five idiots are, I even feel like they're growing up.

Considering what they've done so far, this level of damage is rather cute.

But of the five idiots, Jilk is the one with the worst quality.

[He regretted the trouble he had caused earlier with the purchase of the artwork.]

"Can that guy reflect?"

I was even a little impressed, but Luxion quickly brought me back to my senses.

If it were easy for Jilk to be decent, there would be no hardship.

[So he decided to start making his own art. So he set up a kiln and began to prepare for the production of pottery.]

“Oi, what did he prepare?”

[It’s a kiln. Furthermore, it was prepared on the school grounds. They charge us money to prepare it, but they also charge us money to destroy it.]

It’s amazing what a fool in action can do.

Do they misunderstand the school as their own property?

This makes Julius’s sneaking around raising chickens still look cute, as long as he understands he’s doing something wrong.

Is Brad better off now that the freak show was in a tent?

Greg’s just barely safe, considering the amount of damage he’s done?

Chris was — He was going to pay, so can I forgive him?

But Jilk is no good.

“When I get back to the school, I’m going to punch Jilk.”

[Will you let Julius go?]

“Compared to Jilk, I don’t think I’d have to hit him.”

[Master, have you gone soft on the five idiots?]

“I-Is that so?”

But I had understood that if I leave the five idiots alone, they really won’t do much good.

Could it be that Marie is seriously gathering information in order to somehow recover from the loss of the five idiots?

It's strangely convincing to think that she was running around frantically, thinking that I would be in a bad mood because of the five idiots causing problems.

That's more likely.

But then again, the five idiots are really useless.

If it's just useless then it's better, but they are only going to increase the burden.

"Just having five idiots around is going to add to our expenses."

[They are true pestilence gods. --Do you want to erase them?]

He asks lightly as if to say, "Do you want me to clean up the trash?"

"No"

[It's a shame]

Luxion looked a little downcast and looked really disappointed.

This guy could easily dispose of the five idiots if he only had my order.

While I was thinking that I was troubled by Luxion's disturbing statement, there was a strong knock on the door of my room.

It was Ange who knocked.

"Leon, if you have a moment, I need you right away "

There is a room that Noelle is using for rehabilitation.

The room is equipped by Luxion with handrails and other facilities for rehabilitation.

Noelle, who had been in rehabilitation earlier, was now sitting in a wheelchair for a break.

"Somehow I managed it in time."

Near Noelle, who was happy with the results of her rehabilitation, was the figure of Livia.

She is accompanying Noelle to her rehabilitation, and she seems to be happy for her.

"All your hard work has paid off."

"Yes!"

Livia had been helping Noelle with her rehabilitation on a regular basis.

Therefore, she was really happy to see Noelle recovering so well.

Watching the two of them was Colin, who had been watching Noelle's rehabilitation.

He looks at the two of them, who are having a great time, and looks lonely.

He wants Noelle to pay attention to him, but right now there's Livia.

Besides, his parents had been very strict about not interfering with the rehabilitation.

Actually, he wants her to play with him, but since Noelle is in rehab, he's probably waiting patiently for her to finish.

Perhaps Livia was concerned about Colin, she looked at him and smiled.

"This is boring for Colin-kun, right? Why don't you play outside?"

"I'm fine here"

Livia was also trying to get Colin out of the rehab room for some reason, only today.

Colin doesn't understand the reason, but he refuses because he wants to be by Noelle's side.

" -- I see"

Livia had a complicated look on her face, but quickly returned to talking with Noelle.

Today it made Colin's heart ache more than usual when he looked at Noelle.

(Seeing Noelle-neechan makes my heart out racing)

Lately, he always looks for Noelle.

And yet, when they are alone, he can't speak well.

This had never happened before, and Colin was confused.

At first, as a child, he thought it might be an illness, but his heart ached only when he was with Noelle or when he was thinking about Noelle.

Although this symptom made him uneasy at times, Colin was beginning to realize the true nature of this feeling.

(Is that what I think it is? Jenna-neechan and Finley-neechan also talked about it, so is it correct?)

What they were talking about was that they wanted to have a heart-wrenching love affair.

Even the child Colin knew that falling in love made his heart ache, and he somehow understood that Noelle was the cause of it.

Once you start realizing it, you can't stop.

(I'm, about Noelle-neechan ——)

When he became aware of it, he blushed to his ears and was embarrassed, but as he did so, Ange came back into the room.

“I brought him”

Behind the bright-voiced Ange was the figure of Leon with Luxion.

Leon didn't seem to know that Colin was in this room, but he didn't find it strange since he has been following Noelle around lately.

“Colin was here, too?”

Colin was also happy when Leon, his favorite brother arrive.

"Un. I'm worried about Noelle-neechan."

"Oh, that's nice. I'll give you some pocket money later!"

"Is that okay!"

[Master, you spoil your brother too much.]

Luxion, as usual, admonishes Leon for being so soft on Colin.

It was a familiar sight, but to Colin, it seemed a little odd.

"Are? Why is Leon-niichan here? You don't usually come here, do you?"

When asked, Leon answers honestly.

"Usually Noelle disapproves."

Leon said, and looked at Noelle, who was sweating.

It seems that Noelle had told him not to come.

"It's not right for you to keep me company while you're on break, right?"

"You don't have to worry about it."

"I am worried about it"

Seeing the two of them talking, Colin unconsciously clutched his chest with his right hand.

(Are? Noelle-neechan sound happier than when she was with me)

When Colin fell silent, Leon returned his gaze and answered the other question directly.

"That's why I don't usually come here, but today Ange told me there was something she really wanted me to see."

When her name was mentioned, Ange turned to Noelle and nodded to her.

Taking this as a sign, Noelle tried to show the results of her rehabilitation.

Livia seemed to be supporting Noelle's wheelchair, helping her avoid falling over in case she fell.

Then Noelle slowly stood up from her wheelchair.

"Noelle?"

[This was unexpected]

The reason why both Leon and Luxion were surprised was because Noelle could already stand up.

Noelle was injured so badly that she could have died at one point, but Luxion and the others treated her and saved her life.

After that, with various supports, she had recovered enough to stand up.

The person is pushing herself a little too hard in front of Leon.

Her legs were shaking a little, but she was smiling and showing that she was okay.

"Sapling-chan has grown up well, so I should do my best too."

The growth of the sacred tree has nothing to do with Noelle's rehabilitation.

However, Noelle probably thought that if the sacred tree was trying to live strongly, she would try her best too.

Colin was happy to see Noelle standing up more smoothly than usual.

(Noelle-nee chan has been doing her best until now. It's really amazing)

Colin often saw Noelle's hard work on a daily basis.

He couldn't say that he understood the hardships of rehabilitation, but from the way he looked at her, he could tell how much she was undergoing.

He honestly respects Noelle for overcoming this and being able to walk.

Then Noelle walks toward Leon.

Slowly and surely, step by step, she was getting closer to Leon, and Colin wanted to cheer her on.

(Do your best! Noelle-neechan, do your best ——)

However, he noticed.

“——Eh?”

As Noelle walks up, Leon spreads his hands in embarrassment.

When Noelle crossed the goal line, she looked happy as she jumped into Leon's chest.

Leon was shy at first, but he was impressed by Noelle's performance.

He closed his outstretched arms and hugged Noelle, saying kind words to her.

“Good job, Noelle”

“Ehehe, thanks to everyone. Olivia-san, Angelica-san, mother-in-law and others also helped me.”

“——I didn't help much, though.”

“Don't be depressed. I am the one who refused. I think Leon should take a break while you can.”

“No, that's true, but”

“Besides, I wanted to surprise Leon by showing off my walk.”

They hugged each other happily, and even the child Colin could understand what was going on.

Seeing the stunned Colin, Ange and Livia approached him with troubled looks on their faces.

Ange looked perplexed, but bent down and made eye contact with Colin to talk to him.

“Colin, I have some sweets, so let’s go to another room.”

She must have been very careful.

The reason she went to the trouble of preparing sweets was because she knew this would happen.

So is Livia.

“Ange has prepared some delicious sweets. If you don’t hurry, it’ll be eaten by your sisters.”

They were trying to force Colin out of the room, hiding Leon’s hugging Noelle with their bodies.

Colin felt tears welling up in his eyes.

What he could see through the gap between the two bodies was Noelle, who was blushing —— hugging Leon happily.

Colin gained two experiences at this moment.

One is the first love.

It was at the moment that he realized that he was in love with Noelle.

The other is a broken heart.

He sensed that Noelle was not in love with him, but with his big brother Leon.

Colin, who has realized his first love and experienced heartbreak at the same time —— starts crying and runs out of the room.

“Leon-niichan is idioo~oot !!”

Yelling at Leon, Colin runs from the room.

From behind him, he could hear the impatient voices of Ange and Livia.

“W-Wait!”

“Colin-kun, listen to me!”

There is also Noelle’s surprised voice.

“What’s wrong, Colin”

Colin ran away, but Noelle’s voice almost stopped him for a moment, as if his back had been pulled.

But then he heard Leon’s loud voice.

“Colin! What did I do?”

Unable to bear the sound of his voice, Colin started running again.

Running as fast as he could to his room, Colin didn’t have time to worry about passing someone on the way and being told not to run in the hallway.

Running to his room, he got into bed and pulled the blanket over his head.

As he continued to cry, there was a violent knock at the door.

Outside were Leon and Luxion — and voices of Ange and Livia could also be heard.

“Colin come out! I’ll apologize if I’m wrong! Let’s talk about it. If we talk, we’ll figure it out.”

[I don’t think it’s possible]

“Don’t make fun of me now!”

[I’m not making fun. Leaving him alone for now is the right thing to do.]

“Colin! Talk to me. Please come out of the room.”

When Luxion told him it was impossible, Leon’s voice was impatient.

It must have been a shock to him that his brother Colin hated him.

Leon is known for his disregard for his sisters, but on the contrary, he is known for his

forgiving attitude toward his brothers.

In fact, he loved his little brother Colin more than his little sister Finley.

It must be hard for him to believe that Colin hated him.

He heard Ange quieting Leon down.

“Calm down already. Leave him alone for now.”

“No! I don’t want my little brother to hate me”

Livia admonished Leon who sounded pathetic and reluctant in a gentle voice.

“He needs some time. For now, let’s wait for Colin-kun to calm down. Okay, Leon-san? Let’s give Colin-kun time to calm down.”

“But —— because ——”

The usual thick-skinned Leon was not there.

Finley was just passing by the room and seemed to get angry when she saw Leon.

A frustrated voice could be heard.

“What are you doing?”

“Colin’s locked himself. He told me I was an idiot —— do you know why?”

“He called you an idiot because you’re an idiot.”

“What did you say!”

“In the first place, you, brothers are too soft on Colin. You should treasure me, your sister, too.”

“I hate a being that called little sister!”

“What, you want to fight?”

“Don’t think I’ll go easy on you just because you’re my little sister. I’ve been tormented by little sister for years, and I’ll get revenge on you, too!”

Luxion pointed out in a dumbfounded tone of voice to Leon, who declared that he would payback even if it was his sister.

[When it comes to payback, you’ve been hit at least once, haven’t you? Shouldn’t you take action before she does it?]

“Colin. I was wrong. I’ll apologize, so please come out!”

Leon was fussing at the door, as if he didn’t have time to answer Luxion’s comment.

Colin let out a sob, hiding under the blankets in his room.

“I don’t believe this”

And so ended Colin’s first love.

“Colin hates me. I’m done.”

In the living room where the family was gathered, besides me, Nix, Jenna and Finley were all there.

Luxion is also there, but Ange and Livia are out of the room.

Siblings were around, and they were all aware of my depressed state.

But no one came to comfort me.

Nix held the letter in both hands and let out a small sigh of worry.

“It would be cool if I could write poetically at times like this. I should have studied more seriously at the academy. I know all the old phrases, but I don’t know anything about the latest trends.”

The sender of the letter was Dorothea-san.

When we returned from the Roseblade territory, the two of them were immediately exchanging letters.

Nix is struggling to think of a response.

Brothers surrounding the table in the living room.

Jenna, sitting across from Nix, was teasing Nix as she picked up a cookie from the table and brought it to her mouth.

“Poetic writing by Nix who has no sense? Stop it, they’ll laugh at you.”

Nix, who was told, blames Jenna for her attitude.

“I’m aware that I don’t have a sense. But I’m your big brother. Stop calling with my name.”

“Do you want me to call you a foolish big brother, like Leon a foolish little brother?”

When Jenna showed her unafraid attitude toward her big brother, Nix seemed to have given up.

“Sometimes you call me foolish brother. Ha~a, more importantly, what should I say in reply? Should I get her a gift or something?”

When he says gift, Finley raises her hand.

“I want accessories. I’m going to school soon, right? I want to dress up a little.”

Finley, who was looking forward to entering the school, asked for some accessories to go with her uniform.

Hearing that, Nix shows slight discomfort.

“You don’t need it”

Jenna agrees with Nix, but this one seems to have a different reason.

“It’s safer to buy it in the royal capital. It’s better to see what’s popular over there before you make a mistake.”

Finley leans over to Jenna and asks her a question.

“Eh, is that so? Onee-chan, don’t you know anything about current trends? You were in the royal capital a while ago, weren’t you?”

“Why is it a question? Fashions change every year.”

“Eh~, in that case, I’ll buy it in the royal capital, so tell me about a good store. Ah, do you want to go to the royal capital with me?”

“That’s a good idea! Maybe I’ll go shopping with Finley and get a hottie to marry me over there?”

“Isn’t that impossible?”

“It’s not impossible! If I don’t, I’ll be stuck here in the countryside forever. I want to live in the city!”

Noisy brothers and sisters.

I sat with my knees in my chair and slowly lowered my legs before getting up from my seat and swinging my hands down to the table.

Bang! When the sound of “bang” echoed through the room, everyone’s eyes were drawn to me, as if they couldn’t ignore it anymore.

“Why don’t you listen to me and worry a little? Colin hates me and he’s locked himself away! This is a big deal, and you’re all talking about things that aren’t important — “

I don’t want to listen to your unimportant talk! Listen to what I have to say! I was about to say something like that, resulting in the anger of my brother.

Nix looks at me with a furrowed brow.

“Regardless of Colin’s story. The letter with Dorothea-san is more important to me than your unimportant story.”

Jenna is so angry that her hair looks like it’s about to stand on end.

“I don’t care about your brotherly quarrels! My future is at stake! I want to marry a

beautiful rich man in the royal capital and become a city girl!"

She was so fierce that I said, "O-Oh".

After graduating from the school, Jenna, who hadn't had much chance to go to the royal capital, seemed to be quite impatient.

As I sit quietly with my mouth closed, Luxion sneers at me.

[You've made her angry.]

"Noisy, shut up"

[I will do so. Older brother-kun, would you like me to help you answer the letter?]

I told him to shut up and he accepted, but then he immediately went up to Nix and started babbling.

"Is it okay?"

[Yes. I'm sorry for the trouble Master caused you. Please leave the support to me. As for the gift, I have picked out a few candidates.]

"Thank you for your help. Luxion is more dependable than Leon."

[Of course]

Jenna raises her hand to Luxion and speaks.

"Ah, then introduce me to a beautiful rich man."

[It's a difficult matter for me, but I can provide you with a candidate.]

"Can you really do it?! W-Who? What kind of person ?!"

Jenna takes the bait, and Luxion gives her the name of the son of a bitch.

[The man's name is Roland. His age is in his forties, but I judge his appearance to be passable. He looks younger than his age and is classified as beautiful. He is also one of the wealthiest men in the kingdom.]

"Age is a bit of a problem, but it's not too bad. Can you tell me who and where he is?"

[He is the King of the Holfalt Kingdom]

When she heard that he was a king, Jenna pulled Luxion.

However, Jenna is in more pain because she hit a chunk of metal.

"His Majesty the King! Of course it's no good!"

"Since he has many concubines, I judged that you could blend in as one of them."

"No! Why must I go with a guy who has a lot of women — N-No, isn't it make you afraid to be with His Majesty the King?"

[I see. That's too bad]

She tried to tell that she didn't want a man with a mistress, but even Jenna seemed to respect the king.

Is she respecting him or scared?

But even I don't like the idea of my sister being Roland's mistress.

Although my sister is like that, I feel sorry for her because she is a family member.

Finley spoke to me while I was sadly watching from the side as Nix and Jenna were making a ruckus with Luxion.

"Leon-nii is really no good. I can't believe this guy is some kind of a hero."

She couldn't believe they called me a hero because of my daily behavior.

I agree with her.

"I think so, too. If I'm a hero or something, this country's finished, right."

"You say it yourself?"

Finley was taken aback by my unexpected response.

Around that time.

Ange and Livia were in front of Colin's room.

They had prepared some snacks and drinks and were speaking to Colin at the front door.

"Colin, you don't have to answer. But you do have to listen to what we have to say."

Ange spoke to Colin through the door, but there was not a single sound coming from the room.

(I wish my in-laws were here)

Both Barkas and Ruth were absent, and it was Ange and Livia who had taken on the task of comforting Colin.

Ange talks about the situation.

"I haven't told you the details, have I? Have you heard that Noelle is from the Republic of Arzel?"

There was no answer to her question, but Ange continued her explanation.

"Leon was studying abroad, right? That's when they met. Noelle is in a complicated position. She's also been in danger in her hometown. —— And Leon is the one who saved Noelle."

It was out of consideration for Colin, who was still a child, that she did not talk about the sacred tree or the priestess.

Ange summarized the story in a clumsy way.

"Leon is the only one who can protect Noelle. I know this is hard for you, but I need you to accept the truth."

(I'm not really good at this kind of talk)

His brother's fiancé was his first love, and he was heartbroken before he could confess.

He was falling in love with the wrong person.

When Ange was in trouble, Livia took over and spoke to him gently.

"I'm sorry. I know it's hard for Colin-kun. But don't resent Leon-san and Noelle-san. Actually, we should have told you first, but we weren't sure what to say."

What should they say to Colin, who still doesn't realize it's his first love? His mother, Ruth, was watching over him, saying, "He has to experience heartbreak."

Neither Ange nor Livia taught according to that opinion.

Livia puts her palm against the door.

"There are a lot of adult reasons why they can't be apart. When Colin-kun is older, I think you will understand the situation. So —— "

Before Livia could continue, there was a sound from inside the room.

The door was opened and Colin's tear-stained face peeked through the gap.

" —— I am sorry"

Colin invited them into the room.

Ange and Livia were sitting on either side of Colin on the bed.

They placed their hands on Colin's shoulders and thighs, comforting him.

When Colin finally regained his composure, he talked about his feelings.

"I only just realized that I like her. I —— I didn't realize I was in love. And I felt so uncomfortable that I ran away."

As Colin sobbed, Livia spoke softly to him.

“It makes you feel uncomfortable. But you should apologize to Leon later.”

Colin honestly accepted Livia’s suggestion.

“*Un*. I’ll apologize properly.”

Ange was relieved by his reply and patted Colin on the head.

“Impressive, Colin”

Colin, who was comforted by the two, was offered sweets and tea.

While indulging in their kindness, he talks about his feelings for Leon and Noelle.

“I want Noelle-neechan to be happy.”

Ange nodded.

“You are a strong boy. Even if you don’t end up together, it’s great to be able to wish for the happiness of the person you love. —— I couldn’t do that.”

Colin looked up into Ange’s face.

She looked at him with a troubled smile on her face, which made him curious.

“Did Angelica-neechan suffer from a broken heart too?”

The question puzzled Livia for a moment, but she didn’t say anything as Ange chuckled and smiled.

Ange tells a broken heart story.

“Yes. I went through a terrible heartbreak. I couldn’t really wish for their happiness. Colin is a lot stronger than I was at that time.”

“Even Angelica-neechan suffers from heartbreak. What about Olivia-neechan?”

When the next question was asked to her, Livia looked troubled, and Ange prompted her.

“Why don’t you talk it?”

At Ange’s suggestion, Livia’s gaze wandered as she spoke.

“O-Onii-san in the neighborhood? I-I think I adored him.”

Colin seemed to be wondering about Livia’s unclear phrasing.

“Adore? Not like?”

“*E-Etto.* That — “

Since Livia didn’t want to talk about her first love, Ange urged her.

“I’m curious, too, so tell me. That’s okay, right? You may have had your first love, but you’re with Leon now, aren’t you.”

Ange seemed to think that Livia was hesitant to talk about her first love because she felt bad for Leon.

When Ange says that past loves are irrelevant, Livia hides her face with her hands.

“You’re wrong. Until I came to the school, I had never been in love. It was only recently that I became aware of it. That — “

When Ange heard that, she realized why Livia had hesitated to speak.

Colin notices it too.

“Could it be that your first love was Leon-niichan?”

Livia nods.

“I’m sorry. It’s not something we need to talk about right now, so I tried to cover it up.”

It seems that Livia couldn’t say that her first love had come true to Colin, who had a broken heart.

Ange looks apologetic.

"M-My bad. I-I see. You're just devoted to Leon. I-Isn't it good? Sometimes, it happens."

"I am sorry"

Livia apologizes to him, but Colin shakes his head.

"I'm glad Olivia-nee-chan's first love came true!"

Livia is a little surprised when Colin tells her that, then she compliments him.

"Colin-kun is really kind"

They told him he was great, but Colin couldn't understand what was so great about him.

But when he saw them looking so happy, he wondered if one day he would be able to do the same. Such a question popped into his head.

"I wonder if I'll ever find someone I really like, like you two?"

Ange says to Colin.

"You'll meet. For that, you have to learn well. And interact with a lot of people."

Colin's eyes narrowed at Ange's advice.

"Don't you just want to use this story as an excuse to make me study?"

Ange gently tapped Colin's forehead with her fingertips as he learned about his broken heart and learned to be a little wary of people.

"Idiot. If you don't learn, you don't grow, and if you don't interact with people, you will never encounter someone in the first place. Or do you think it's okay that you never grow and never meet anyone?"

" —— Not okay"

Colin is convinced, and now Livia gives him some advice.

"Colin-kun will meet someone someday. Maybe it's someone close to you or you will

meet in the future. So, please continue to cherish the encounter."

" —— Is that how you two met Leon-niichan?"

Colin asked this question, but he would soon regret it.

Ange's cheeks blushed a slight red.

"I guess so. Looking back, I want to praise my decision to get involved with so many people at the school. Meeting your brother was one of the luckiest moments of my life."

Livia blushed with embarrassment, but spoke happily.

"In my case, it was Leon-san who approached me. Leon-san was really cool at that time. He invited me to tea when I was in trouble. He was a gentleman and kind, and
——"

The two of them got excited and started to talk about their history with Leon.

While listening to it, Colin thinks.

(Are? Do I have to listen to everything?)

CHAPTER 10

LITTLE SISTER

After getting hated by Colin, Leon's depression was terrible.

Sitting on a sofa in the living room of the mansion, Leon looked down with a gloomy expression on his face.

The psychological damage seems to be great.

When Ange saw that, there was actually one thing that bothered her.

While watching Leon from afar with Livia, she expressed her concern.

"Doesn't he hate a little sister existence? Is it possible that she also hates me, a little sister?"

"I-I wonder?"

Livia was also having trouble answering.

Ange has an older brother, Gilbert, above her.

Therefore, Ange could also be called a little sister.

She was a little worried when he openly said he didn't like a little sister.

"There's nothing I can do to improve this. I don't want Leon to hate me."

"It's okay. It's absolutely impossible for Leon-san to hate Ange."

"Y-You're right. But Leon's dislike of sisters is quite extreme."

"Thanks to Louise-san, he was able to overcome older sister, though."

When Louise's name came up, Livia had a complicated look on her face.

She was the woman Leon had befriended in the Arzel Republic, so this was not an interesting story for the two of them.

However, they were both concerned about Leon's dislike of sisters.

That's also understandable when looking at how he usually behaves.

When Jenna and Finley arrived in the living room, they found Leon and started to stir him up to get back at him for his usual behavior.

"Foolish brother. I heard that Colin still hates you? Don't tell me, you didn't realize that Colin was in love with Noelle? You're still so insensitive, aren't you, foolish little brother~."

"Normally you'd notice ~. *Aniki* is really too dense."

They laughed at Leon, but he didn't react well, perhaps he was too shocked.

"Go away"

Jenna folded her arms, grinning and looking down at Leon, who was sitting.

"Where's that talkative guy we used to know? How does it feel to be hated by Colin, whom you cared about so much? Didn't you piss off Nix, too? How does it feel to have brothers who hate you? Do you want this onee-sama to comfort you ~? "

"It's the worst. I don't give a damn if you guys hate me, but it hurts my heart to have my brothers hate me."

Maybe Leon really thinks so, and his chest seems to be in pain.

Finley's cheeks tightened.

"You should have a little affection for your sisters."

"Sorry, you guys' shares are sold out."

As usual, he is salty towards his sisters.

Jenna and Finley looked at Leon, one eyebrow twitching as if they were about to yell

at him.

Ange and Livia were rather relieved that he could talk lightly despite his depression.

Ange watched the three of them from a distance, and understood how Leon felt.

"Well, it's that. There's a minimum of courtesy even among blood relatives. Besides, the barons and the viscountesses have been terrible so far because of the kingdom's policies, so it's probably unnecessary."

"Neither of them are bad people, though."

Neither Jenna nor Finley is a villain at heart.

However, there is a problem with their attitude.

It could be said that the environment was one that made Leon dislike them, but that doesn't explain some things.

"Jenna is harder on Leon than he is on her, but Leon himself seems to dislike his little sister more. Is there a reason for this? —— Livia?"

When Ange looked at Livia, she was in serious thought.

Noticing her gaze, Livia hastily asks.

"W-What is it?"

"Is there something on your mind?"

"*Etto* —— yes. But it's still hard to explain."

When Livia said she couldn't explain it well, Ange decided not to ask any more questions.

Ange let out a small sigh.

"Is there any way to cure his hatred for little sister?"

She probably thinks so even more because she is a little sister.

Then Luxion approached while floating.

Livia's shoulders twitched and she put a slight distance between herself and Luxion.

It seems that she is still wary.

Luxion didn't seem to mind and spoke to two of them.

[Are you concerned about Master's dislike of little sister?]

“Oi, is this really going to cure Leon’s dislike of little sister?”

[There is no mistake in my calculation]

“Don’t lie to me. Leon has been driving you crazy, hasn’t he?”

[Master is an exception. It would be a problem if the rare case is referred to.]

As she listened to the conversation between Ange and Luxion, Livia saw her own appearance.

(This might be a little embarrassing)

After moving to another room, Livia and the others changed clothes and waited in the room.

It was all Luxion’s idea.

Livia was anxious, but she was also curious, so she went along with Luxion’s plan.

(Little sister, huh —— Before, Marie-san called Leon-san onii-chan. And I didn’t think about it too much at the time, but she definitely said a second life. Second, what does that mean? Why did she say onii-chan at that point?)

It was an event before the final battle with the Principality.

Livia chased after Marie, who ran away, and was told that she would return everything at that time.

Although she didn't think too much about it at the time because she was confused, looking back on it now, a lot of things seemed unnatural.

(Even though they had been in conflict for so long, Leon-san had also forgiven Marie-san since then. He hates her attitude, but he doesn't reject her — There are times when they act like they're real siblings. Is there something?)

Although he verbally hates Marie, he sometimes shows the same attitude towards her as he does towards Finley.

But it was difficult to hear that directly from Leon.

Leon has many secrets.

He even hid Luxion's true appearance until recently.

They didn't know if he would answer if they asked him, and they didn't want to burden Leon by asking him poorly now.

(I wish Leon-san could tell me more about things. But for now, I want him to rest)

In fact, the reason the two of them cosplayed was not only to cure his dislike of little sister.

When they heard that Leon would be better, there was a part of them that took Luxion's suggestion.

Livia also took the trouble to change her clothes to cheer up Leon, who had been pushing himself so hard.

In the room, besides them, there was Cordelia, who had helped them change.

Now she was about to leave the room.

“Then, I will call the Marquis.”

“I-I count on you, Cordelia”

“Yes”

Cordelia's eyes were looking at Ange, who looked embarrassed, but Livia noticed that there was a strange sparkle in her eyes.

As Cordelia left the room, Ange checked her appearance in the mirror.

She was dressed in a miniskirt maid's uniform.

The head is adorned with ornaments that resemble the ears of an animal, and around the hips is an ornament that resembles a tail.

A figure of a maid with cat ears was reflected in it.

"Are you sure this is the right thing to do? If Leon draws back, I'll cry!"

Livia completely agrees.

"I'm going to cry too"

Previously, they had worn maid outfits at school festivals, but never accessories that imitated subhumans.

By the way, Livia was wearing droopy dog ears.

Why are the two of them dressed like this?

It was all Luxion's plan.

[No problem. Master will be overjoyed. Just call him "onii-chan" and he'll be cured of his dislike for little sister in no time. I can guarantee it]

Livia questions Luxion, wondering about the length of her miniskirt.

"Is he really going to be pleased? He saw us in our maid uniforms at the school festival, and he was happy, but I don't think he was that happy."

Ange seemed to have the same anxiety.

"Will the ears and tail of an animal please Leon? And—W-Will calling him "onii-chan" really cure him from hating little sister? On the other hand, won't he become conscious of little sister and avoid us?"

Ange is usually a strong person, but she was afraid that Leon would hate her.

When Livia sees that situation, she thinks it's very cute.

(Ange is cute today too)

There was a gap between her and her usual self, and Livia was pleased with the current situation just to see her like this.

Luxion made a dumbfounded gesture that he often made to Leon in front of them — a shake of his head.

[Neither of you understands anything. Master is simple. Even though he hates little sister, he has changed since he met Louise. If the two of you spoil him with your appearance, he'll fall easily.]

Livia holds her hand.

"I don't want that."

If Luxion's explanation is true, it means that he is simple and shifty.

He would be happy with whoever spoiled him? Such anxiety sprouted anew.

Meanwhile, it seemed that Leon was getting closer.

When Luxion warns of Leon's approach, he disappears and hides.

[Master has arrived, hasn't he? Please follow the instructions, both of you.]

Having come this far, all they had to do was be prepared.

Ange shows her spirit in a maid's outfit with animal ears and tail.

"We come this far, whether we succeed or fail, just do it. I've prepared myself."

Livia is also inspired by Ange's motivation and shows her determination.

"You're right. We can't be shy, can we? I'm going to really spoil him too! But it's kind of embarrassing to call him onii-chan."

“I usually use onii-sama, so is that better?”

At the last minute, as they begin to think about this and that, there is a knock at the door.

“Are you both here ~?”

When they heard Leon’s carefree voice, they responded and invited him in.

“It’s open”

“You can come in.”

As the door clicked open, Livia and Ange struck a cute pose.

As the image of an animal, it’s like raising their hands slightly and pouncing on him in a cute way.

The first one to speak up was Livia.

“I’ve been waiting for you-woof, onii-chan”

” — Eh?”

In the end, she didn’t know what to call him, so she just called him onii-chan.

But even though her face was red with embarrassment, she leaned closer to Leon and made sweet sounds.

(T-This is so embarrassing! But if it makes Leon-san feel better, it’s a small price to pay.)

But Leon froze in surprise.

Then Ange hugged Leon.

“I caught you, onii-sama. Play with me or I’ll go wild-nya~”

Ange must have been embarrassed, but she added “nya~” to the end of her word as Luxion instructed.

But there was no response from Leon.

From that situation, it seemed that they had failed.

(Luc-kun's a liaaaaaar!)

She blames Luxion in her mind, but suddenly, Leon collapses to his knees.

“Onii-chan!”

“Onii-sama!”

When the two of them tried to hug him as quickly as possible, Leon was in tears.

When they looked upon his reaction in confusion, Leon burst into tears of joy and sobbed.

“I’ve just come to an understanding here. A little sister is not cute. But a figure like a little sister is cute.”

Leon cries with happiness when they call him onii-chan, and he lets out his true feelings.

“I’ve always wanted cute little sisters like these!”

He must have compared them to his actual sister.

After being adorably spoiled by Livia and Ange, Leon’s sense of value about a little sister had changed.

Ange is at a loss.

“Are you cured of hating little sister?”

“No, I don’t like little sister. But I’ve added the idea that an unrelated blood little sister is cute to my dictionary.”

He hates little sister, but a figure like a little sister is cute — Leon’s sense of value has certainly changed.

It's just as Luxion says.

Livia was not completely satisfied, but she swallowed it and forced herself to accept it because Leon looked so happy.

"I'm glad you liked it"

"Thank you, both of you. You look great in that outfit."

Looking at Leon's happy face as he took both of their hands, he understood that this outfit was indeed effective.

Ange was satisfied with Leon's expression and felt relieved.

"I'm glad you enjoyed it."

"By the way —— You're here, right, Luxion"

The friendly mood ended here.

Leon sensed that Luxion was hiding and his face changed when he called out his name.

As Luxion appeared, Leon stood up.

[You were overjoyed. But you should be more careful with your reactions. They were getting anxious.]

"Is that all you got to say? What do you make them do?"

[They asked me for help in curing your dislike of little sister, so I gave them a hand. I also gave them some advice on Master's sexual preferences.]

"You lied to them about me having a cosplay interest, didn't you?"

[——It's a joke. I tried to imitate Creare too, but jokes are difficult. I didn't think the two of them would take it seriously. But I'll make a picture of the two of them later. How many would you like?]

"Prepare three of each, including the spare."

Livia, who was listening to the conversation, gradually became expressionless.

The same goes for Ange next to her.

Cordelia, who had shown Leon to the room, came from outside the room to talk to Luxion.

"I'd like three of each. Ah, I'd like to have about thirty of ojou-sama's as a souvenir. How much is it?"

"I don't mind, it's free"

"I'm kind of sorry about that."

Ange watched Cordelia as she started to talk that she was going to bring back an embarrassing photo of herself as a souvenir.

Then, they turn their gaze to Luxion, who deceived them.

"—Oi"

Ange called Luxion in a low voice.

Luxion turned his red lens on Livia and the others, but as he slowly moved away, he left the room and ran off somewhere.

[Both of you, Master is feeling better. The mission is a success.]

Livia and Ange forgot about their own outfits and ran out of the room to chase Luxion.

"Luc-kun!"

"Luxion, I need to talk to you!"

The two of them were running around the Bartofalt family mansion in their maid's uniform.

"Ah, this photo is nice"

“This picture shows the cuteness of ojou-sama. I’ll be sure to give them to Vince-sama and Gilbert-sama.”

Later.

I was dividing the photos I received from Luxion into a pile with Cordelia-san.

Cordelia-san wanted a picture of Ange, and she couldn’t resist.

“This one is good, too. This gesture is also nice. Oh, here is a young lady who has let her guard down! This picture is too much for the gentlemen, so I’ll retrieve it for you.”

“Don’t you love Ange too much?”

“Of course. I’ve known ojou-sama for a long time. As soon as I started serving the Duke family, I became ojou-sama’s valet. She was really lovely then.”

As Cordelia-san began to talk about how cute Ange was, her usual cold impression was considerably softened.



Even though she's dealing with me, she's happy to tell me about Ange's childhood.

I pick up a single photo.

It was a picture of the two of them in a cute pose.

“— So cute”

As I tucked the photo carefully into my pocket, Cordelia-san closed in on me.

“Marquis, are you listening to me?”

“Y-Yes!”

“Then I will tell you a very special episode of ojou-sama’s life. That was when she was in the throes of her engagement to that fool.”

For now, I understand that Julius is treated as a fool by Cordelia-san.

If anyone were to hear it, it would be a crime of disrespect, but Julius' value is so low right now.

I don't feel like correcting it, partly because of what he did to Ange.

As it was, Cordelia-san made me listen to her talk about Ange for the rest of the night.

CHAPTER 11

A BOND STRONGER THAN A CHAIN

Nix was nervous from the morning on that day.

He walked around the mansion restlessly, returning to his room and then coming out again, he seemed unable to relax.

I was stunned to see Nix in such a pathetic state.

“Calm down. It’s just Dorothea-san coming to visit.”

Nix, who was dressed very enthusiastically, had styled his hair well.

I could tell that he was looking forward to Dorothea-san’s visit.

“I-I’m calm!”

“Where?”

Nix looks displeased with me, but occasionally takes a deep breath to ease the tension.

Even though you were not very fond of Dorothea-san not long ago.

“My big brother is pathetic.”

Yareyare, I shrugged my shoulders and shook my head, and Luxion who was not convinced by my statement said something sarcastic as usual.

[If Big Brother is pathetic, Master is even more pathetic.]

“You idiot. When I couldn’t run away, I made up my mind, didn’t I? Aniki is on the verge of getting married, and yet he’s dithering about it.”

[I’d say that’s a false perception.]

“Where? Yesterday, he was wondering if he is good enough? He has been whining about it all day.”

[I'm referring to the part about Master couldn't run away, you made up your mind. Master was the one who was struggling until the very end. You have no right to mock your brother.]

“Is that so?”

In a huff, I saw Colin watching me in the corner of the room.

“Colin!”

“Hyi!”

I stood up hurriedly and Colin ran away in surprise.

I stretched out my hand to Colin as he ran away, depressed that I couldn't talk to him again today.

“If only we could at least talk. Luxion, do something.”

When I give an unreasonable order, Luxion refuses.

[I don't want to because it's mostly been resolved]

“What do you mean you don't want to? That's an order!”

[No problem. The problem has already been resolved.]

“Is it true?”

As I doubted Luxion, the entrance of the mansion became noisy.

Apparently, Dorothea-san and the others have arrived.

After having his heart broken, Colin had been looking for an opportunity to apologize to Leon.

However, he couldn't speak to him well.

When he went to see Leon again, he found Noelle in a wheelchair there.

"Leon, did you get a chance to talk to Colin?"

"I didn't"

"I see. I'd talk to him too, but he's avoiding me right now."

Seeing the two of them depressed, Colin's heart ached.

However, when he saw the two of them getting along, there was still a part of him that couldn't yet swallow.

It would be unreasonable to expect a child Colin to be able to separate the various aspects of his life, so he left again without speaking to Leon.

(Let's at least apologize in a place where Noelle-nee-chan isn't around)

Because he had been running around like this, he had missed the opportunity to apologize.

As he tried to head somewhere calm, he saw his parents taking the boat out of the window of the mansion.

What they were pulling out of the warehouse was a floating boat.

The boat is loaded with food and drinks.

Barkas is dressed a little better than usual, and Ruth is dressed up as well.

Colin was curious about their situation, so he went outside.

When he left the house and came outside, he saw them getting into the boat.

Barkas gives Ruth a hand.

Colin calls out to them.

“Where are you going? We’ve got guests today?”

It seemed strange to Colin that the two of them were vacating the mansion when he had heard that an important guest was coming.

However, both Barkas and Ruth looked at each other and smiled.

“It’s okay, Nix will take care of it. Dad’s going out with Mom, you stay out of Nix’s way and be quiet.”

When Barkas said that, Ruth also reminded Colin.

“Right. Just don’t get in Nix’s way. Just go play with the others.”

Colin didn’t quite understand, but decided to nod anyway.

“I understand. Anyway, where are you two going?”

Barkas scratches his cheek with his finger, feeling embarrassed.

“Aa~, this is that. I thought I’d have a look around the territory with Mom. We’ll just take a small boat and go around.”

They boarded a small floating boat and toured the territory.

It’s not like they are going out into the sky, it’s just a little outing.

The only thing that bothered Colin was that his parents were more dressed up than usual.

And then he comes to the answer.

“Maybe a date?”

Ruth squints.

“Ara, this child has grown up.”

Barkas scratched his head without answering.

He was probably embarrassed.

So, instead, Ruth answers him.

"Now that I've made up with Dad, we're going out together. So Colin, you're going to have to stay home today."

"Is it okay to go out at this time?"

Would it be all right that his parents were absent when Dorothea from the Roseblade family was coming?

Colin's question was answered by Barkas.

"It'll make Nix feel easier. Colin, don't get in Nix's way. But you can bother Leon, he can take a little trouble."

Ruth agrees with Barkas's opinion.

"Is he really that great or not?"

It seems that his parents are unsure of their opinion of Leon.

However, Colin was relieved to see them.

(They've both made up)

The two of them had been somewhat distant lately, which worried him even as a child.

Colin was relieved to see the two of them back together again.

"All right. I'll go to my room and read a book."

Barkas patted Colin's head a little roughly.

"Good boy"

As he watched them off in the boat, Colin felt envious of them.

A good married couple.

Not long ago, he had a formal wife named Zora, but Colin didn't have very good memories of her.

She was not usually at the mansion, and would occasionally come and complain.

Although she was Barkas' wife, he couldn't see her as family.

When the two of them are out of sight, Colin realizes in that place.

"*Are?* Dad was married to Mom and Zora, but they have been alone ever since?"

Zora had been gone before he knew it, and no one in the family mentioned her name anymore.

As a child, he thought he probably shouldn't ask, but there was no sign of Barkas marrying any other woman after that.

Colin felt uncomfortable.

" —— *Are?*"

When Colin returned to the mansion, he found both Jenna and Finley walking down the hallway.

The two do not seem to notice Colin and start talking when they stop in the hallway.

Colin decided to hide behind a pillar and wait for them to leave, thinking that he would be teased or ridiculed if he spoke to them.

Then the two of them start complaining.

"Ah~, *mou!* I really don't understand why a bunch of ladies would show up in a rural area like ours?"

Jenna had a look of heartfelt incomprehension on her face and complained that she couldn't understand why there was a young lady like Ange and the others in her house.

Finley seemed to agree with her, but she was not complaining.

"Sure, it's strange, but it's a good thing we get souvenirs and stuff."

It was a carefree statement from Finley, but Colin agreed with it.

When Ange came to stay at the mansion, the meals became more luxurious.

In addition, Duke Redgrave had sent them gifts in addition to the money for her stay, and Colin was happy to find some unusual sweets among them.

If Ange was there, he would get sweets — that's all he knew.

He's heard that she is a young lady, but he doesn't understand exactly how important she is.

However, since his parents were all sitting low, he knew that she was probably higher than them.

Jenna put her hand to her forehead in astonishment at Finley's carefree attitude.

"They're usually people you can't get involved with unless you're a follower. I was surprised when I saw Leon, but I don't expect Nix to bring the Countess."

"We're barons, aren't we?"

"Idiot!"

"Ouch!"

Jena flicked her finger at Finley's forehead, who said that they were noblemen and barons, so there was no need to feel nervous.

Jenna explained to Finley in detail the reality of the Kingdom of Horfalt.

"In our country, there's a world of difference between a baron and a count. Didn't you see the castle of the Roseblade family? That's the real nobility. Ours is just a mere hair's breadth from a knight's family."

"It's true that the Count's family was great, but~"

Jenna lets out a sigh at Finley's disapproval.

"You'll understand once you enter the school, even if you don't like it, you're going to understand. Real young ladies are different."

"That much?"

"All the clothes they wear are custom-made, and they have a lot of craftsmen working for them. They even have their own airship. The maids who follow them are from the family of knights."

"Rich people are awesome."

Finley was impressed, but she didn't feel it yet.

Colin, who was also listening to the talk, thought it was great, but he couldn't understand it.

Jenna was annoyed with her sister who didn't understand, but she didn't scold her, probably because she remembered herself before she entered the school.

"You may not understand it now, but when you get to the capital, you'll understand it too, even if you don't like it. And when that happens, you'll realize how unnatural our situation is."

"I still find it strange. That our boring older brothers can bring young ladies. Brother Leon brought a duchess and brother Nix brought a countess. I can't believe it either"

From Finley's point of view, knowing what they usually look like, his brothers must be quite plain.

The two of them can't understand why beautiful young ladies would fall in love with such boring older brothers.

The conversation then turns to Dorothea, Nix's partner.

Jenna crossed her arms and turned her head down, perhaps feeling uneasy.

"In Nix's case, it's a problem because he's taking over the house. If she's his wife, she'll have to live in this house. Angelica-sama will eventually move out, so I'll just have to be patient, but when I think about Dorothea-sama running the house — "

Jenna, with a blue-faced and shaking, looked truly terrified.

From behind a pillar, Colin was frightened to see his usually arrogant sister frightened.

(Dorothea-“sama”? There are still people who are called by Jenna-neechan like that. What’s more, if the scary Jenna-neechan is scared of her, is Dorothea-neesan that scary?)

Seeing the frightened Jenna, Finley also tells her about the scary part of Ange.

“Ah~, I get it! I also asked brother Leon for some money, and she really stared at me. That was scary”

However, this one was laughing goofily, saying, “I got scolded.”

When the two of them show their excessiveness to Leon, Ange and Livia show their displeasure.

From the two of them, Livia, who was not a noblewoman, was not scary.

But Ange is different.

Even though Jenna is older than her, she can’t be strong because there is a solid hierarchy.

It’s more powerful than the school caste, and Jenna can’t go against it because there are certain standards.

There was some flexibility when men were involved, but on the other hand, the hierarchy in that area was very strict among women.

Jenna was venting her anger at Leon for putting her in such a troublesome situation.

“Not only did he bring a duchess, but he also brought a foreign princess. What is it with our men? Thanks to them, we’re on the short end of the stick.”

Finley agreed with that opinion, and voiced her dissatisfaction with Leon.

“Yeah. I can’t forgive Brother Leon for his habit of having women around. Isn’t it strange that he has three wives? What’s so good about that brother? The three of them

don't have a good eye for men, do they"

"No way~. I will never forgive him. Even if he had money, I would never choose Leon."

The sisters were all despising Leon, and Colin could feel the discomfort growing in him as he listened to them.

(--Maybe it's strange to have three wives?)

Colin's next stop was the courtyard.

Having a lot of things to think about, he sat down on the edge of a flower bed in the courtyard and lazily moved his legs around.

Then, a man and a woman come out of the mansion.

The man was Nix, and the woman was Dorothea, their guest.

It seems that they cannot see Colin.

Nix was a little nervous, but he wanted to talk to Dorothea about something important.

Colin quickly remembered that his parents had told him not to disturb Nix, so he ducked down without making a sound, saying, "I have to hide."

Then, Nix --.

"Dorothea-san!"

"Y-Yes!"

When her name was called, Dorothea's voice was nervous and stuttering, and her face was as red as Nix's.

"I-I want -- to live here -- with you."

When Nix shyly expressed his feelings to the best of his ability, Dorothea paused for a moment before replying loudly.

“I-I want to live here too!”

They both turned red and didn't move for a while, and then they both started laughing together.

— Colin has witnessed a scene of confession.

Colin, who was watching the situation, was envious of Nix's appearance and congratulated him in his heart.

(Congratulations, Nix-niichan)

And Dorothea also tells Nix how she feels about him.

“I love Nix-sama”

“I-I'm the same way.”

“Yes. But I think I am more than you. No matter how many times I am reborn, I will find you and fall in love with you. And we will be united again and again. I would never give you to anyone.”

Nix was embarrassed to hear that passionate line.

“Ahaha, I'm happy about that. Ah, but you know.”

Dorothea nodded her head at Nix, who hesitated to say.

Nix seemed to give up and made some conditions.

“About the collar, if you promise not to do it in public, we can do it when we're alone.”

He doesn't deny Dorothea's hobby, but offers terms that can be compromised.

Then Dorothea shook her head.

“No, that won't be necessary.”

“Eh?”

“There is no need for a collar or a chain between Nix-sama and me.”

“I see! Ah, I’m sorry. It’s not that I’m happy about it. I just thought it would be fine to have that kind of relationship.”

“Of course. From now on, we’ll be together forever and ever. I’ll never be apart from you.”

“U-Un?”

Nix seemed to be bothered by Dorothea’s phrasing, but he didn’t think too much of it and the two of them brought themselves closer together.

Noticing that they were about to kiss, Colin’s face turned bright red and he decided to leave quietly.

However, Colin somehow thinks.

(Hm~m, is this normal? I feel a little scared)

Before dinner.

Colin was visiting Nix’s room.

Nix looked very tired, but happy that his confession had been successful.

Therefore, he welcomed him with open arms.

“What’s wrong? If you want me to help you apologize to Leon—”

“You’re wrong. I have a question for Nix-niichan.”

“A question?”

“Yes. You know, Nix-niichan is going to marry sister Dorothea, right?”

“O-Oh. Well yeah.”

Nix, who was embarrassed but confirmed it, looked quite happy.

"I doubt I'd be a good match for her. It's a lie that when Leon got engaged to Angelicasan, I laughed and said it was none of my business."

"I see. —— So, are you going to marry someone else next?"

Nix's brow wrinkled for a moment as he heard Colin's question.

But he quickly softened his expression, saying it was a child's question, and answered in Nix's own way why Colin had asked him this.

"You've seen Dad, and then there's Leon, so you think that?"

"Yes. Dad was married to Zora."

Seeing Colin's difficulty in saying Zora's name, Nix briefly explained the situation.

"They were not family. Dad married Zora for the sake of society, but the real family is us. In the first place, he couldn't even work the territory on his own."

Although the Kingdom of Horfalt had long been a place where some women were more powerful than the men, the men in weaker positions had a concubine and a mistress.

The reason for this was that it was essential to have a partner in order to work.

Whether you are a nobleman who has been given a job by the royal court or a nobleman who has a fiefdom, if you don't have someone who can be trusted to take care of the house, your work efficiency will decrease.

Even more importantly, if you're going to entrust your house to them, you should feel more at ease with your family.

For this reason, there were other women besides a legal wife.

Otherwise, many of the houses were unable to work and collapsed.

So, when Barkas took Ruth as his concubine, he didn't touch any woman after that.

For Barkas, only Ruth was his wife.

"Dad got married because he couldn't deal with the society, but I think Mom was the only one he wanted to marry."

Colin confirms Nix's feelings.

"Is Nix-niichan the same?"

"I can't guarantee the future, but I can't think of any other woman right now."

Colin thinks when he hears Nix's words.

(Is Leon-niichan, who has three fiancées, really strange?)

Colin had never given much thought about marriage in the past, but after his first love and heartbreak, he started to think about it a lot.

Then he thought of Leon's fiancées.

He wondered why Leon had three fiancées?

"Leon-niichan, I'm sorry about the other day."

I felt my eyes getting hot in front of Colin's deep bow.

I didn't realize that Colin was in love with Noelle.

"I apologize too. I should have explained it to you from the beginning."

"It's okay. It's my fault."

Not long ago I thought he was a child, but it seems that Colin is growing not only in appearance but also in mind.

I can't help but be happy with my little brother's growth.

It's always Luxion who dampens my emotion.

[Your brother has grown mentally. Isn't this something Master should learn from?]

"Normally I'd say something back, but since I'm in front of Colin, I won't. Besides, I've had a lot to think about this time."

Colin apologized to me after dinner, and I was relieved that we could finally be the close brothers we used to be.

Noelle, who had been watching us, looked quite happy.

"I'm glad you're both making up."

Noelle, who had been fretting about our relationship, seemed to be very happy.

Ange and Livia, who were overseeing the situation, also looked relieved.

"It took a while, but now you're back to normal."

"Leon-san is relieved. I'm also relieved to know that all the problems have been taken care of before the new school year."

I've caused a lot of trouble for the three of you regarding me and Colin.

"Even though we were on vacation, the three of you couldn't enjoy it. Sorry."

I feel guilty for ending my spring break in such way.

It all started when Ange and Livia were worried about me.

I told them it was a misunderstanding, but they didn't believe me, which was a little dissatisfying for me.

However, thanks to that, it gave me a chance to rest, and I want to thank the three of them.

Ange gives me a gentle smile.

"Don't worry about it. As long as it helps you relax, it's good enough for me."

Livia put her hand on her chest, as if she felt the same as Ange.

“We had fun too, so don’t worry about it. It’s been a long time since we’ve been able to spend time with Leon-san.”

Noelle held out her hands, expressing her happiness with her body.

“My rehab is going well, and Leon’s family has been very good to me. In fact, I feel rather bad about it.”

The way they looked at me, they cared about me.

“Thank you, all three of you. —What’s wrong, Colin?”

He tugged at my clothes and I looked over to see Colin looking up at me.

When I turned to see if there was anything more, Colin gave me a serious look.

“Leon-niichan”

“What?”

“Leon-niichan, I think you should take good care of the three of them. No, definitely make them happy.”

The word “definitely” is heavy, and I hesitate for a moment to reply.

But denying it here would not help, so I decided to nod my head.

“Y-You’re right. I intend to.”

There are no absolutes in this world.

So my response of “I can’t promise, but I’m willing” must have sounded unreliable to Colin.

“You’ve got to be clearer than that! Nix-niichan confessed his feelings properly to Dorothea-neechan and said he was not thinking about anyone else.”

I didn’t expect to hear Nix’s confession story from Colin.

In the first place.

“You’re kidding?! That *hetare* Nix confessed?”

“He did! Dorothea-neechan said she would marry Nix-niichan no matter how many times she was reborn!”

“Eh, isn’t that a bit heavy?”

What’s that, heavy?! Isn’t it really heavy?!

For someone like me who has a previous life, that’s like saying I’ll chase you even if I die.

Didn’t that Nix guy think anything of it?

“By the way, what was Nix’s reaction when he heard Dorothea-san’s line? Was he shocked? Or was he scared?”

Colin is, why would you ask me that? He looks at me as if to say that.

“He was pleased. It’s natural because his confession was successful.”

“You’re kidding, right?!”

If someone said that to me, I’d do everything in my power to figure out a way to escape.

It’s too scary to be chased after death!

Even though it’s not the most heart-pounding line, but the ladies are excited.

“As Dorothea would say. No matter how many times I am reborn, huh. No matter how many times I’m reborn, I’d still like to meet you guys.”

“It feels like an amazing fate that we can meet even if we are reborn. If I were reborn again, I’d look for you all.”

“Women in the Kingdom say amazing things. But it’s kind of nice.”

— You’re kidding, right? Why is it so popular?

I got a chill down my spine.

'Even if I die, I'll chase you until the next life' things, just Marie is enough. But in the case of Marie, it's not a sexy story but a comedy, so is it still acceptable?

As I was thinking about it, Colin resumed his talk.

"Leon-niichan, are you listening to me? I think you should be more serious. Learn from Nix-niichan."

"Y-Yes"

I never thought I would see the day when my little brother would lecture me.

Luxion, perhaps amused by the situation, teased me.

[It's really encouraging to see your little brother grow up. What do you think, everyone?]

The three people who had been smiling earlier were slightly envious of Dorothea-san.

Ange puts her hand to her lips.

"I suppose so. I'd be lying if I said I didn't envy Dorothea."

Livia put her hand to her cheek.

"It was surprising that Nix-san confessed to her. I certainly adore it."

Noelle looked at me worriedly.

"I guess that makes Leon the most *hetare* within the brothers when it comes to romance."

Colin experienced a broken heart and was able to apologize properly.

Nix confessed.

Compared to those two, I'm inferior in the romance area.

In agony, I look for areas where I am winning.

"— The number of fiancés won't lose."

Luxion and the three others shook their heads in puzzlement.

The four of them understood that it was my usual joke, but apparently Colin didn't get it.

"That's not the problem! You have three important people, so Leon-niichan has to work hard three times!"

"Ah, yes"

It was a child's mysterious theory, but I understood what he was trying to say.

From Colin's point of view, it was hard to accept that the person he fell in love with was one of my multiple fiancées.

Colin looks like he's about to cry.

"I can't make her happy, so I have to ask Leon-niichan. I wish I could make her happy, but I can't—Please, Leon-niichan, make the three of them happy."

What should I say to my little brother who was crying and sobbing? Should I just say, "I'll make everyone happy so leave it to me!" here?

But it sounds kind of like a lie when I say it.

Seeing me in a panic, Luxion said in a rather happy tone of voice.

[How does it feel to be corrected by your brother?]

"—I can't say anything back."

The castle of the Count Roseblade.

Dorothea clearly seemed in a good mood since her return from Bartofalt territory.

Deirdre, watching her, is dumbfounded but happy.

"I didn't expect that he would be the one to confess. Did onee-sama tell him how you really feel? The other party is going to be shocked, though."

Dorothea turned her body toward Deirdre, there is a slight, dark smile on her face.
(TLN: *Danger Detected*)

"Of course. I told him that no matter how many times we are reborn, we will always be connected, and he gladly accepted. After all, a physical chain is no good. It's not enough at all. Even if we die, the chain of our souls that connects us in the afterlife is the best."

Dorothea was serious, no matter how many times she was reborn, she was going to find Nix and be tied to him.

The weight of love is so heavy that even her sister, Deirdre is taken aback.

"You're just not being serious, are you?"

"That's fine. I just don't let him go."

Looking at Dorothea, who smiled, Deirdre shrugged.

"My older sister is a woman of heavy love."

EPILOGUE

Einhorn has arrived at the port of the royal capital.

In a port where airships come and go, Finley, carrying a large travel bag, is filled with anticipation.

“Finally, I’m living in the royal capitaal!”

Is it like the feeling of having come to Tokyo?

At my time, I was very concerned about the marriage hunting that was about to begin.

“Are you so excited about living in the royal capital? You’ve been here a few times, haven’t you?”

After disembarking from Einhorn, we were about to board a small airship that would take us down to the royal capital.

Ange and Livia are on their way to the Duke’s mansion in the royal capital with Noelle, and the three of us here are me, Luxion —— and Finley.

“I like the idea of being able to live here. I’m going to be a city girl here.”

She is saying the same thing as Jenna.

“Ah, yes. By the way, how do you plan to live in the royal capital?”

When I ask about Finley’s future plans, the answer comes back as expected.

“Of course, I’ll marry a rich man who lives in the royal city. I’ll look for a man who’s good-looking, tall, and has a good fortune.”

“I’m glad you have such high ideals. Just try your best to face reality as soon as possible.”

It’s okay to have time to dream.

The important thing is to know the reality and modify your life plan.

The sooner you fix it, the better.

However, Finley would not be convinced if I explained it to her with my mouth.

She believes that she has her own prince.

Sometimes I almost forget that this is the world of that otome game.

Because there are ideal princes and nobles, the possibility is not zero, but the quality is poor.

Oddly enough, the people around us dream about it because there is an ideal there that we might be able to reach.

You cannot reach out to them, but you dream about them because you go to the same school and can talk to them. If I had been in a school in my previous life and my idol had been in the same class with me, I'm sure I would have dreamed about it too.

Maybe we can go out, something like that.

So I guess she could at least be allowed some time to dream.

Reality is always harsh, and there's no time to do that.

Finley puffed out her cheeks at my attitude.

"Aniki really doesn't have any dreams. Don't be so high and mighty just because you've achieved your ideal."

I'm certainly a winner, having bonded with Ange, Livia, and Noelle.

I don't intend to be overbearing, but I also don't intend to be more inept than I need to be.

"I was just lucky."

"You're being honest today"

"I'm a guy who's good at being honest. And let me tell you honestly, I've finished my marriage hunting and I will be living a comfortable school life. Good luck with your marriage hunting."

"That's a really unnecessary thing to say."

Pui, turning her face away from me, Finley continued to look at her surroundings with interest.

There are many new students at this time of year, and many of them, like Finley, are curious about their surroundings.

The only difference from two years ago was—the appearance of the sub-humans in the harbor.

I see subhumans doing the heavy lifting, and they are working in a full sweat.

The beautifully dressed sub-human walking behind the girls was nowhere to be seen.

Most of the sub-humans I see are well-built, sturdy people who seem to be good at manual labor.

[Master, please be careful]

If you look at the direction Luxion points his red lens, you will see a new student, a noble lad with his cronies, walking towards here.

He pushes away the surroundings and approaches over here to get into the small boat.

As for the young master's cronies, the boys acted superior than the girls.

I felt uncomfortable with the sight, but I was convinced that the common sense of the school had changed.

I pushed Finley with my hand, who just looked away and didn't notice the group.

"Get out of the way, ugly"

She hasn't been pushed, but Finley gets pushed out of the way and moves.

When she was pushed, Finley's blood rushed to her head at the bad words.

"What are you doing!"

Two years ago, this would have been an unbelievable scene, but the new students in front of me were different.

The boys looked at each other and started laughing mockingly in front of Finley.

"Oi oi, is it okay for a girl to act like that towards a boy? You're from the countryside, right? You'll never get married before you graduate from the school."

When I heard that line, you know what I thought?

EEEEH—I was so shocked.

The content of the dialogue has not changed from before.

It's just that the arrogance has changed from girls to boys.

The girls around me looked down, feeling uneasy.

Finley, who was called a bumpkin, couldn't take it anymore and shouted out loud, attracting the attention of others.

"Don't be ridiculous! In the first place, you're the one who came in the side. Get in line."

The person on the other end of the line gave us a look of contempt.

"You poor, undisciplined bumpkin. You better remember that at the academy."

The young master told Finley that he remembered her face and tried to get into the small boat that had arrived.

The people around me didn't stop such a young master — but someone noticed me.

"Oi, that person"

"Isn't he third-year Leon-senpai?"

“You’re kidding, right?!”

“It’s true! I’ve seen him once. I’ve heard he’s coming back from studying abroad this year, and I’m sure of it.”

“Then he was listening to it, wasn’t he? Eh, calling Leon-senpai a bumpkin?”

“Ah~, that guy is over”

As the buzzing around them grew louder, the young master and others must have noticed something strange.

He looked around and seemed uneasy.

I was actually going to pay him back at the school, but he stood out so much that I had no choice.

This time, I decided to stop at just nailing it down.

“Hello. I’m the brother of the bumpkin. I’m sorry if we caused you trouble.”

“W-Who are you?”

The young master did not lose his composure.

He probably hasn’t realized who I am yet.

“I’m a countryside nobleman. But my title is Marquis.”

“Marquis? T-That’s a lie.”

“It’s true. You can check in with the royal palace.”

“Of course it’s a lie! I-If you’re going to apologize, now’s the time.”

“I can’t do that”

Using your position to intimidate others in this way — Honestlly, I like it a lot.

But you never know where the really scary people are in the world.

If you're overbearing, there's even a chance that the person you're dealing with is a very unusual person.

Normally, it's my style to find out what they're up to and then start paying them back.

But the problem is that if I don't go through with it, there will be some idiots who will misunderstand "He is no big deal!".

For better or worse, there are many naive people like the young master in front of me.

"You know, that's annoying, so line up quietly, first year."

I narrowed my eyes at him and the young master averted his gaze.

He gets into a small boat and tries to escape, so I grab him by the shoulders to stop him.

"Line up"

When I intimidate him with a low voice, he lets out a "Hie" and withdraws quietly.

The cronies had quieted down and were lining up at the end of the line.

I push Finley's back and board a small boat.

Inside the small boat, the seats were lined up and all seat belts were prepared.

Finley, who was sitting next to me, expressed her dissatisfaction with the young master earlier.

"What is it? It's too rude to girls, right?"

"You're right"

"And aniki is aniki. Why didn't you come forward sooner?"

"I hate troublesome things"

When I said that, Luxion, who was at my side, said it was a lie.

[You were going to pay him back later, weren't you? You really are a dirty master.]

Finley has forgotten what happened earlier and is trying to get some distance from me.

"Isn't that worse?"

You're so rude.

Even if I say I'm going to pay him back, I'm just going to look up his parents' house, check out the difference in ability, and then talk to them later and say, "Thank you for taking care of me back then".

When he arrived at the school, he could hear who I was from the people around him.

If that had happened, it would have been like a successful payback.

"I'll just pester him when we meet again at the school."

"It's kind of small "

"It can be said that there is a degree that can be tolerated. But still ——"

Looking inside the small boat, I saw that, unlike my first year, there had been a change in the relationship between men and women.

Two years ago, there wouldn't have been anyone like the young master earlier.

——It's kind of sad that only the positions have been reversed.

It means that men and women are no different.

"The room is getting bigger again"

I arrived at the dormitory and let out a sigh when I saw my new room.

The room is too large for a student to use.

I would have felt more at home in a smaller room, but since I was an active marquis, I was shown to a special room.

It was a room that would normally be used by Julius and the others.

I put my few belongings in the large room and sat down on a chair, Luxion was checking the room.

[There's nothing suspicious]

"Aren't you being overly vigilant?"

[Master should be more alert. More than that, Marie and the others would probably try to join us soon.]

She must know I'm back, through Creare.

So it's about time to ask.

"Perhaps I'll get her some tea and snacks?"

I got up from my chair and unpacked the snacks and other items I had purchased as souvenirs and laid them out on the table.

Luxion is circling around me.

"Is there anything you want to say?"

[No, I just thought you looked like you were having fun. Are you so happy to see Marie?]

"*Ba~ka*. This means thanks for gathering information. She will do her best there is a food."

[You know all about your little sister in your previous life, don't you? As expected, you are a siscon.]

"Oi?"

[Am I wrong? It was Master who was *dere-dere* when Angelica and Olivia treated you

like an older brother. I didn't expect you to be moved to tears, though.]

"You don't understand anything. There's a heaven and earth difference between a little sister and a non-blood related sister. Those two are the best! Marie is different."

When I said that, Luxion poked at the inconsistency of the current situation.

[Oya? The present Master is not related to Marie by blood. From what you just described, Marie would also fall into the category of the best little sister, wouldn't she?]

"She's a little sister in the soul, definitely different!"

[—— a little sister in the soul? It seems to me that she has been placed in an even more special category?]

"Aa~, she is special. I mean she is especially annoying."

[It's strange that you went to the trouble of preparing tea and snacks for such a Marie.]

"I told you it was bait. Even a horse will work harder if you hang a carrot in front of it."

Luxion says she did her best this time, so I'll give her some preferential treatment.

That way, Marie would be enthusiastic now that she could eat sweets if she tried hard enough.

——Why? I feel a little sorry for Marie, who in her previous life was only able to catch on with brands and expensive things, but now she's satisfied with sweets.

Now that she was taking care of the five idiots, I understood a little bit more about how hard it was to take care of them.

"——Well, it's that. I'm starting to think it's okay to be a little nicer."

[Are you a tsundere? It doesn't suit you]

"Can't you talk without throwing in a tease every time? Isn't that the problem? Why don't you have Creare check you out."

[I'm better than Creare]

The artificial intelligence that never doubts that he is superior is very annoying.

The flexible Creare looks more clever and superior to me.

While I was talking nonsense with Luxion, there was a weak knock at the door.

“Ye~s. What, is it Marie? Come on in. I’ll get you some tea.”

Standing in front of the door was Marie.

But she was acting strangely.

Marie looked down and was sweating cold, and wouldn’t make eye contact with me.

“Oi, what did you do?”

“A-Aniki, *a-anone*.”

This attitude of Marie’s, I remember it from a previous life.

That was the attitude of Marie when she made a big mistake.

I squeeze Marie’s trembling face between my hands.

Her cheeks narrowed and she forced her mouth to purse, and Marie’s eyes were teary.

“What did you do! Say it!”

From the way Marie was acting, she must have done something irreversible, right? I couldn’t help but have such a bad feeling about this.

Luxion checks his surroundings with a red lens.

[Master, I can’t see Creare anywhere. I expect she is hiding behind a stealth feature.]

The bad feeling gets even stronger.

I smile at Marie and ask her what happened.

“Marie, tell me everything”



“D-Do you promise you won’t get mad?”

“Depends on the content.”

The only time Marie asks for this kind of promise is when the problem has become quite serious.

She understands that I’m going to be angry, so she wants me to say that I won’t.

At this point, I think my smile disappeared and I probably had a blank expression on my face.

Marie gave up and tried to talk, so I let go of my hands. Then Marie, with a blue face, tells me something I can’t believe.

“We had turned one of the capture targets into a girl.”

“Ha?”

For a moment, my mind refused to comprehend what was being said.

The capture target is a man, right? And now he’s a girl?

Eh, wait a minute.

Why does he become a girl? I mean, can he even be one?

“Marie, I’ll confirm one by one.”

“Yes”

“First, the capture target is a man, right? It’s not like he had different gender from the beginning or anything, is it?”

I considered the possibility that he was supposed to be born a boy, but had been born a girl.

Marie shook her head.

“Then next. You said he became a girl, but to what extent? Like, cross-dressing and all

that?"

Marie said, her eyes swimming as she couldn't stop breaking out in a cold sweat.

"W-We had made him a perfect girl."

"— And by "that", I assume you mean you're involved, right?"

The hands gripping Marie's shoulders tightened.

In spite of the pain, Marie gave a detailed explanation.

"The boy that Creare was experimenting on was one of the capture targets! In the game, he's a senior, and he was enrolled last year!"

"Why don't you tell me first! What do you mean experiment?! Not an observation, but a real experiment!"

"It was only recently that I remembered! I-I didn't think Creare would go that far either!"

I was surprised to find that one of the capture targets, who had enrolled last year, had turned into a girl due to Creare's experiments.

"What are you doing. Turn him back quickly. Tell me where he is."

"Impossible"

"An?"

I glared at Marie who refused and did not change the answer.

"Because—He said he wanted to be a girl."

"You're lying, right? Eh? Isn't the capture target was supposed to be a man?"

"—He said he realized who he really was. When Creare gave him the gender change, he was so happy he cried. He thanked us over and over again. With this, a new life is possible now, he said. We can't say we want him to turn back now."

Covering her face with her hands, Marie was crying that she couldn't turn him back into a man now.

"Even so let's follow the scenario!"

I was confused and trying to restore it somehow, but Luxion was finding it difficult.

He stops me from forcibly changing his gender back.

[I don't recommend it]

"Why?"

[The person changed his gender because he wanted to. I don't know the details, so I can't make a judgment, but if we force him back, he'll resist. Also, if that person was mentally female, there is a possibility that his preference is male. If you force him back, there's a high possibility of failure.]

What Luxion is trying to say is that it is unlikely that he will be tied to the main character if he is forced to change his gender back.

"—I-Is there a girl-meets-girl pattern?"

In anguish, I hope that he will still be an object of capture even he becomes a girl.

But when I look at Marie, she trembles and says that Luxion is right.

"He said he wanted to date a manly man, and he was very happy about it."

"What are we gonna do?"

Both Marie and I get down on our hands and knees on the spot.

If I had known this would happen, I wouldn't have left it to Marie and the others.

"Me and Luxion would have been more appropriate."

[I wonder about that. There's the matter of your brother's matchmaking. If it was Master, wouldn't it have been more complicated?]

Marie looks up and asks Luxion for a detailed explanation of the matchmaking.

“Eh? What did you do on the matchmaking?”

[Master’s brother and Dorothea of the Roseblade family had matchmaking. The big brother was not keen on the idea and wanted it to fail. However, he helped the matchmaking that would have failed if he hadn’t done anything, and Master led it to success. And it was a matchmaking that had a very low probability of success.]

Marie is looking at me with her cheeks drawn together.

“What are you doing, aniki?”

“I don’t want to be told only by you. More importantly, where is Creare?”

“She was the first one to escape. 99,9% of the failure was caused by her.”

I was walking through the school building with my shotgun.

“Where are you, Creareee!!”

Searching every corner with bloodshot eyes.

Creare had not only hidden herself, but had also placed dummies to distract us from our search. Every time Luxion was grabbed by the dummy, he became irritated.

[Master, over here!]

I passed by some enrolled students and new students several times, but none of them called out to me when they saw me.

When the teachers realized it was me, they avoided eye contact with me.

However, I don’t have the slightest bit of time to worry about that right now.

Luxion went to the door of the tool shed built at the bottom of the stairs and nodded his one red eye.

"Is Creare here?"

[There is no mistake]

I opened the door and the room was dark and dusty.

The light coming through the doorway made the dust that had flown up appear to glitter and shine.

Finding an unnatural place in the middle of it all, Luxion irradiated a laser to find Creare, who had blended into the surrounding landscape with optical camouflage.

[There's no point in hiding, Creare]

[Hie]

The shotgun is loaded with non-lethal rubber bullets.

Having made the pump action ready to fire at any time, I ask Creare.

"It's a shame, because I had such high hopes for you."

[Listen to me, Master! I didn't know. I didn't know he was a capture target!]

"Shut up! Is it okay to have the gender change if you didn't know about it? There's a limit to what you can do in this world! I guess you're not programmed with ethics."

I had underestimated Creare that she let him change his gender for the sake of experimentation.

I'd forgotten that he was also a dangerous artificial intelligence on the side of the old humans.

Creare reveals her true nature in front of me.

[Ethics only apply to the old humans. It doesn't apply to the new humans!]

"Hou, so you're saying that doesn't apply to me?"

[Y-You're wrong! Master and Marie-chan are completely different! Luxion, don't just

watch, help me.]

Creare asks Luxion for help, but he's irritated because he's grabbed the dummy too many times, so he's salty.

[Creare, I'm disappointed in you. It doesn't change the fact that you failed to carry out Master's orders.]

[W-What? It doesn't matter what happens to one of them. There are still substitutes.]

It is true that the boys to be captured still exist, but it is a different story when the possibilities are reduced by one.

There is a possibility that if we do nothing, the target may have ended up with the protagonist.

"One possibility is gone because of you. Moreover, I don't like your attitude of running away without remorse."

[Absolutely]

Creare muttered *boo boo*, probably sensing that me and Luxion would not change our attitude.

[Sacrifices have to be made for development. That's how humanity has progressed. I'm just an experiment on the new humans, so I am not at fault. In the first place, the target just happened to be the subject of the experiments! I'm innocent!]

Is she stupid?

There is no way that someone who does a gender change under the guise of experimentation is innocent.

Indeed, there is no law in the Kingdom of Horfalt that says you can't change your gender without permission.

In the first place, this situation was never envisioned.

However, there is a limit to what things can do.

“Creare, do you have any last words?”

As I pointed the muzzle of my gun at her, Creare, in a fit of desperation, finally shouted.

[I wish the new humans should perish!]

I pulled the trigger without hesitation.

Creare was hit by a rubber bullet and bounced around the warehouse like a pinball, and finally rolled under my feet.

[H-Horrible. Master is demon]

“Not as much as you do with your experiments.”

[Creare, you must reflect]

Having successfully punished Creare, Luxion and I were left with a big problem.

I didn't expect that the boy of the capture targets would become a girl.

What's going to happen to that third Otome game?

EXTRA 1

MADAM DOROTHEA

When Leon and the others were heading to the school.

A fleet of airships from the Roseblade family came to the port owned by the Bartofalt family.

There are several warships and transports respectively, as if to show the military and financial power of the Count's family.

A large number of people gathered at the port to see what was going on.

Watching the scene are a young man and a middle-aged man sitting on a crate during a break.

The two of them usually work at the port.

They were watching with abhorrence as a large crowd of onlookers gathered to watch the Roseblade family's fleet of airships, interrupting their work.

However, the young man asked the veteran about the airship, perhaps because they were also curious.

"I've seen that family crest before. Did some trouble happen to bring them to the port in such numbers?"

The young man was a little frightened as the warship of the Roseblade family entered the harbor.

Wouldn't it start a war between the nobles? That's what he imagined.

However, veterans who know a little more about the situation reassure the young man that there will be no war.

"It won't be a conflict. Nix-sama came to the harbor a little while ago, and he said

something about preparing for a pickup."

"Oh, really? I thought that person had done something again."

That person is Leon.

In Bartofalt territory, it is easy to become a rumor because you stand out, for better or worse.

When you are in the harbor, people come from other places, so you naturally hear gossip.

One of the people who often appears in the gossip is Leon.

The veteran exhaled a sigh and talked about Leon.

"Leon-bocchan, huh? He seems to have become a Marquis now."

When he jokingly uses reverent language, the young man laughs it off as unsuitable.

"However, is it really that easy to become a Marquis?"

"Because Leon-bocchan is very active. I didn't think he would be promoted."

"Really? I don't know much about him, but he's a kingdom hero, isn't he?"

It was only recently that the young man had started working at the harbor.

As a result, he only saw Leon a few times in the distance.

The young man looks envious as he recalls the moment.

"He had two beautiful women with him, didn't he? I wish I was born a nobleman."

When the veteran heard that, he looked surprised and immediately pointed out the young man's mistake.

"You really don't know anything. Everyone knows that women are stronger and troublesome in the nobility."

"Eh, is that so? But if it's that beautiful, maybe I can bear it."

"It's good to see a young man with dreams. —— although you'll soon learn the reality."

The people in the area didn't know much about Leon and his family's life, and most of the stories they heard were passed down from person to person.

Still, from the way Barkas was acting and Zora's attitude that they had seen so far, they could predict that marrying a nobleman would be troublesome.

Before long, Zora was no longer coming, and rumors were spreading that she had been officially divorced.

Although there is talk of reforms underway in the kingdom, the perception of the people has not changed significantly.

As they were talking, they saw Nix, who had come to welcome the Roseblade family.

The young man looks at him and gives his impressions.

"What can I say? He's kind of plain"

"You're not afraid of anything, are you? Don't ever say that in front of him."

The young man describes Nix as plain, and the veteran makes a drawn face.

The Bartofalt family is a family where the lord does not abuse his people, but is still not so loose as to tolerate disrespect.

From the young man's point of view, he would prefer that the lord not be Nix.

"I want Leon-sama to be my lord. I think that if I stay under that man, I'll be able to play an active role in the war and get a promotion. A baron might be hard to get, but a knight or baronet might be possible, don't you think?"

The veteran shrugged at the dreaming young man.

"I prefer Nix-bocchan. He's a reliable person, and he's a lot tougher than the flashy Leon-bocchan."

“I’d rather have a lord who is willing to do more war. That way, I can rise in the world and get lots of beautiful wives.”

The veteran understands the young man’s desire to rise in the world and have a beautiful woman as his partner, just like Leon.

But he didn’t agree.

“Maybe it’s better for a young man to have dreams like that. But I absolutely hate it. It’s enough to work moderately and drink at night in a bar. I don’t want to go to the battlefield where it’s life or death.”

The young man pouted, thinking that the veteran had made fun of his dream.

“I don’t want to live a simple life. Nix-sama is too plain and has no future.”

“Peace would be easier, though.”

“I don’t want to work hard. I want to be like Leon-sama and make a splendid career that will be recognized by the king. Then I’ll be able to say goodbye to this countryside.”

“You say that? —— They’re coming down.”

As the young man declares that he has no future, the veteran notices a woman coming down from the airship.

Pointing his finger and guiding the young man’s gaze, the woman, who appeared to be a noblewoman, was there.

The young man blushed when he saw the picture-perfect young lady of nobility.

Her skin was white and untanned, and her blond hair shone in the sun.

Her silky hair swayed in the breeze, and her cool expression showed a touch of coldness.

It was perfectly suited to the tastes of the young man.

“She’s so beautiful.”

“I’ve seen that person before.”

“Eh, when?”

“On your day off.”

As the young man was getting frustrated, the woman spotted someone and put on a big smile, erasing her previous cool expression.

She ran out and jumped on Nix, who showed up to greet her.

When the young man saw two of them, he was stunned with his mouth wide open.

The veteran watched the young man’s reaction with amusement as he explained to him who the woman was.

“She’s a young lady of the Roseblade family, future wife of Nix-bocchan. From what I’ve heard, she’s fallen in love with him.”

The young man who had said earlier that he disliked plainness was severely depressed at the sight of the woman of his preference hugging Nix.

“My love is over”

“It never started in the first place.”

No matter what the veteran said, the young man hung his head and did not respond.

About the time Nix was heading to the port for pickup.

At the mansion, Jenna was wearing a maid’s uniform.

She looks frustrated and unhappy with her work, and does not want to do it.

All that comes out of her mouth is complaining.

“Why should I have to go through this? I was supposed to accompany Finley to the royal capital.”

Under the pretext of showing Finley around the royal capital, she intended to go with her.

However, Ruth did not allow it.

Ruth put her hands on her hips and scolded a disgruntled Jenna.

“How long are you going to feel like a student at the school? You’ll have to work hard at home from now on. You’re an adult now, so don’t think you can play around. If you don’t want to do that, then go and find yourself a partner.”

“I can’t find them in the countryside!”

“We have a lot of young people here!”

“Everyone is a countryside man and poor. I absolutely hate it.”

After graduating from the academy, Jenna had few plans for the future.

Unable to find a partner while in school, she came back to her parents’ house.

However, she has been refusing to go on matchmaking with the men that Barkas and Ruth introduce to her.

The reason was that she had seen the boys at the school and had become more discerning.

She really couldn’t believe that a man from the countryside would be a match for her.

Ruth lets out a sigh.

“Don’t keep dreaming, look at reality. You heard what Angelica-sama and Olivia-chan said, right? There are fewer noble men in the kingdom now, so it’s more difficult.”

“I-I heard about that, but.”

In the Kingdom of Holfalt, the number of men has been decreasing due to battles with monsters and wars between humans.

This is especially true for men in the noble class. Once you become a knight, there is

no escaping the battlefield.

If you are a civilian, unless you are a soldier, you will not die unless you are involved.

This is because airships are inevitably the mainstay of warfare, and the number of soldiers that can operate them is limited.

Even if you force people to become soldiers, they will be useless if they are not trained on a regular basis.

As a result, the mortality rate of knights and men of the noble class who could not escape was very high in the Kingdom of Horfalt.

Since there are more women than men, men are inevitably in the position to choose.

The situation was reversed from what it had been a short time ago, Jenna knew that, but she didn't feel it.

"Not only Leon, Nix got the Countess, too. Don't you think I have the same luck?"

Seeing the situation where her brothers are getting a girl out of their league, I will be too — or so her dream.

Ruth gives Jenna a cold shoulder.

"If you had that luck, you could have gotten married while you were still at school."

"Mom, don't say that!"

Jenna's voice grew louder at words she didn't want to hear.

Her gestures became louder and more frustrated.

"I'm a victim too! Because of Leon's rampage, I felt like I was on the short end of the stick at school. Thanks to that, I missed my chance."

He fights with Julius when he was the Crown Prince.

A rival faction traps him in jail.

There were many other things that had happened, and Jenna had a lot to say about them.

However, Ruth does not sympathize when she hears it.

"Didn't that Leon prepare an exclusive servant for you. —— He betrayed, though."

"Don't mention Mioru! That was Leon's fault ——"

Mioru is an exclusive servant that Jenna had hired before.

He was a beautiful male sub-human that Jenna liked, but he had betrayed Leon and was beheaded by Barkas.

Ruth also hates the person who betrayed his son, so she is very strict with Jenna.

"If you cover for a traitor, I'll kick you out of this house."

"I-I don't cover him, so don't get mad."

When Jenna is depressed, Ruth tells her about what Leon has done to her parents' house.

"You know, Jenna. After Leon became a successful adventurer, he invested in our family. Do you understand that it's because of this that your allowance has increased?"

"I-I heard that."

It was before he entered the school.

After getting Luxion, Leon invested in his family home, the Bartofalt family.

If he had just given the money, Zora, who was still the legal wife at the time, would have taken it, so he took the form of investment.

Thanks to that, the roads and ports in the territory were improved and became more vibrant.

Thanks to Leon, the finances of the Bartofalt family have been stabilized.

Ruth chastised Jenna verbally in a matter-of-fact manner.

"He's already independent and doing well, so what about his sister? I don't mean expecting the same results as Leon. But you understand that we want you to be independent and live a good life, right?"

Having been told that, Jenna averted her gaze.

(I don't think that foolish brother will be so successful! I thought he just got lucky one-shot)

A lucky one-shot that succeeded in finding a lost item.

That was Jenna's evaluation of Leon.

However, the next thing she knew, he was playing one role after another, and now he was treated like a hero.

It was unbelievable to Jenna, who knew him as he usually was.

(I guess I shouldn't keep talking about Leon)

In Ruth's mind, Leon was a filial son who was able to stand on his own.

Jenna, on the other hand, lives at home and shows no signs of being independent.

Jenna thinks it's a bad time, so she mentions Nix this time.

"Yes, it's Nix! Even Nix didn't get married until after graduation!"

"Don't call your onii-chan by his name! Besides, Nix already has a partner."

"Remember, when he graduated, he didn't have any matchmaking partners? Isn't it wrong that you're only rushing me?"

"T-That's true, but."

Jenna thinks.

(Alright, I think I can manage to buy some time on the topic of Nix. Now, if I can just

get a chance to live in the royal capital for a year or so, I'll find someone then, too)

Jenna tries to talk Ruth out of it, but she is interrupted.

It was Yumeria who called out.

"Ano ~"

Jenna glared at Yumeria, who spoke to them in a carefree voice.

"I'm busy right now, so go away. You can leave the work to someone else."

(You need to read the situation! This is my chance to convince Mom)

She immediately tried to resume her persuasion, but Yumeria did not back down.

"But~"

"What is it! You know, I'm busy right now — Eh?"

When Jenna looks toward Yumeria, the person behind her comes into view and makes her freeze.

Ruth was so surprised that she couldn't even speak.

Among the few who were there was Barkas.

"What are you guys doing? I told you today was a very important day."

Rather than being angry, he looked dumbfounded and ashamed.

Nix, who was with him, is looking toward Jenna.

"I could hear you all the way to the front door"

Jenna also felt embarrassed that their conversation had been overheard.

But the problem was more with the person who heard it.

"Ara Ara"

It was Dorothea that they brought.

Ruth hurried to apologize for not greeting her at the door.

“I-I’m very sorry!”

However, Dorothea responded gently.

“I arrived ahead of schedule, so that’s not a problem.”

For Ruth, she is his daughter-in-law, but Dorothea is in a higher position than her.

After all, she is a countess.

From the perspective of Ruth, who came from a knight family in the countryside, she was a lady out of her reach.

There is also Ange, who will be her daughter-in-law, but from Ruth’s point of view, both are princesses.

It was the same for Jenna.

“I-I’m sorry”

Jenna bowed, but Dorothea walked up to her and put her face close to hers.

The tone of a voice whispered in her ear sounded sexy, even though she was the same gender.

But the content was cold, regardless of the tone of her voice.

“That’s no good—As a wife, I won’t forgive you to call your own brother by his name. I will not tolerate anyone disrespecting my husband, even if they are family.”

“Hie!”

Stepping back, she saw Dorothea smiling at her.

The people around her didn’t seem to hear what was being said, and when they saw Jenna’s attitude, they looked at her like, what’s wrong?

However, Dorothea says with a smile.

"From now on, we are sisters, albeit in-law, so let's get along."

Jenna responded to that smile with a forced smile.

"Y-Yes."

But inside, she was in a cold sweat.

(What is this woman!)

Jenna is annoyed by Dorothea's provocative attitude, although she can't resist her because she is a countess.

(Hmm! There's no way a city girl like you can live here in the countryside. I'm sure you'll run away anyway)

.

The next day.

Dorothea's reason for coming to the Bartofalt house was to live together before she got married.

This was partly due to her strong desire, but rumor has it that it was to show the public that they had a connection.

Jenna didn't know the reason either, but Bartofalt family seemed to be getting so much attention.

(Maybe Leon's rampage has brought attention to my parents' house? This is just normal countryside, I don't know what everyone is thinking?)

Leon may be awesome, but his parents' family, the Bartofalt family, is different.

Although they are wealthier than before, the countryside is still the same.

Jenna, dressed in her maid's uniform, decided to watch the situation, thinking that Dorothea would soon make noise if she lived in such a rural area.

(Now, could a young lady live in the countryside? I don't think so, anyway)

Ange also lived in the Bartofalt house, but at that time Luxion was able to make ends meet.

However, Luxion was nowhere to be found at the mansion, accompanying Leon.

In this condition, Jenna thought, she would surely make a noise.

(Is she heading out? That's the training ground, right?)

Dorothea changed into easy to move clothes and walked out of the mansion.

Jenna also sneaked out and followed, and was approached by Yumeria.

“Ano~, you have a work.”

“Be quiet! You come with me”

“Eh?!”

Jenna pulled Yumeria, her watcher, with her and they went outside together.

There was a group of men gathered there.

There were men besides Barkas and Nix, as well as Colin.

“What are they doing here in the morning?”

When Jenna says that, Yumeria tells her from the side.

“Eh, you don't know? Sometimes they have training sessions like this. It's a training day that even the knights participate in.”

“Knight? Ah~, our knight. They're always so un-knightly.”

Jenna sees the men, but they are all filthy.

Jenna felt that the young man also looked like a rural man and did not look like a knight.

Meanwhile, Dorothea is also participating.

"Is she trying to score points here? No way ~. A woman should just take care of the house. It's not her ability to fight that's important, and she's wasting her time."

When Jenna says so, Yumeria speaks the truth without reading the air.

"Eh, but Jenna-sama doesn't work on the house, right?"

"—I-I'll do it when I get married."

"If you can't do it normally, you won't be able to do it after you get married. I try to be careful about making mistakes, but I still do it a lot."

When Yumeria explained that she had tipped over a bucket the other day, Jenna gave her a cold look.

(Eh, what? She's pretending to be an airhead and lecturing me?)

Isn't it possible that Yumeria actually understands what she is doing and is playing an airhead character? As she was thinking this, she heard gunshots from the training grounds.

She quickly turned her head towards them and saw Dorothea holding a rifle.

She ejected the shells with a familiar gesture, and when she fired the next round, she hit the center of the target.

The people around her said, "Oh~" with admiration and clapped their hands.

"You're kidding "

As Jenna is amazed at her skill with a gun, Yumeria claps her hands without making a sound.

"It's amazing. Most of the hits are in the middle."

From the perspective of the two of them, Dorothea's skill seemed to be quite good.

The men in the training area gather around Dorothea as she finishes shooting.

Nix spoke to her in admiration.

"You're really good. Do you handle it regularly?"

"It's just a little bit of experience. But my family started out as adventurers, so I've had some basic education."

"Eh? Regardless of gender?"

"Of course. But although I fought monsters at the school, I couldn't do anything when I was involved in actual combat with people. So it's a matter of experience."

"No, I think it's enough if you can do this."

While the others were admiring her, Barkas was pondering something.

Then Colin, who was participating in the training, spoke to Dorothea.

"Dorothea-neechan is amazing! Angelica-neechan can do many things, but Dorothea-neechan is the best with a gun."

The over-familiar attitude of Colin made the people around him nervous for a moment, but Dorothea responded gently.

"That's a nice thing to say. Colin, right?"

"Yes!"

"I'll bake you some pastries later. Let's have tea together."

"Is it okay! *Yatta!*"

The others were relieved to see Dorothea's figure.

Perhaps it was the strong image of Zora when it came to noblewomen, making them a little wary.

The knights talk a little further away so that Dorothea and the others can't hear them.

"*Iyaa ~*, Nix-sama has found himself a good wife."

"I was wondering what I would do if someone like Zora came, but I guess we can relax for now?"

"Didn't she say she made baked cookies? She can handle a gun and cook? Real young ladies are different."

They knew about Ange too, but they were aware that she was a very small exception.

With the advent of Dorothea, the perception is changing to "real young ladies are different!".

Jenna, who was listening to the conversation, uttered a line that sounded like a sore loser.

"I-It doesn't matter if I know how to use a gun. I'm not going to war. Besides, I can just buy snacks."

Yumeria smiled and ---.

"Jenna-sama can't do both."

--- said a line that pierced her heart.

"Let's just give up "

"No! I'm not going to give up until I see her cry!"

The place changed and they came to the kitchen, where they watched Dorothea making baked pastries.

There are maids dispatched by the Roseblade family around, but Dorothea is making sweets by herself.

There was also a figure of Ruth nearby.

"You're pretty experienced at this."

"It's just a hobby, mother-in-law. I am no match for a real professional."

“It’s still amazing. I envy you because I can only make countryside sweets.”

“If so, I can teach you a few things. Why don’t we make it together?”

“Doesn’t that bother you?”

“Not at all. I’m happy to be able to cook with mother-in-law.”

“T-Then, please.”

“Don’t be so formal. Although I am not officially married yet, I already consider you my family.”

Ruth was so moved by those words that she was about to cry.

“I actually wanted to cook with my daughter like this. But my girls wouldn’t even go near the cooking area. I never thought that a young lady like you would not only call me your mother-in-law, but also cook with me.”

“Is that so? Then, one dream has come true.”

Dorothea comforts Ruth and they start making pastries together.

Jenna watched them, but she felt bad for her mother and her heart ached.

While hiding in the shadows, she whispered an excuse.

“If you had told me, I would have helped you.”

Yumeria, who was by her side, gave Jenna a serious look.

“Jenna-ojousama, I hope you and Ruth-sama will cook together. I think it’s better to do it before she tells you, if possible.”

“Y-You don’t have to tell me.”

While two of them were talking, Dorothea and Ruth had grown quite close.

“You’re good, mother-in-law.”

“Is that so? Let’s make it for everyone next time?”

Yumeria, who was watching that, suggested to Jenna.

” — They’re getting along really well, aren’t they.”

“R-Right.”

“Jenna-ojousama, I think Ruth-sama would be happier if you stopped all this and got back to work. Why don’t you get back to work?”

For some reason, Jenna felt defeated, but she didn’t give up yet.

“It’s just a facade anyway. Her nature will reveal soon.”

Yumeria’s shoulders slumped.

For the next few days, Jenna kept an eye on Dorothea.

She also took her watcher, Yumeria, around to see if anything could go wrong.

However.

“Why don’t you raise your voice! How can you be so happy here in the countryside?”

Yumeria was at Jenna’s side as she shouted that she didn’t understand.

Yumeria accompanied her, looking at Dorothea.

“Instead of getting upset, she seems to be having a good time. And she’s getting along with everyone except you, Jenna-sama.”

“That’s the problem! Why isn’t anyone on alert? She is a stranger! She is enemy?!”

“I don’t think she’s an enemy, but she’s certainly friendly as a stranger who’s here.”

“Right! Nix is all lovey-dovey with her, Colin calls her onee-chan and attaches to her, Mom and Dad are all happy, what’s wrong with them!”

In a matter of days, all of the family except Jenna had accepted Dorothea.

Jenna was impatient because it was different from the knowledge she had heard.

“Normally, when a wife comes along, you snub her, right?”

Yumeria denies it.

“I’m not saying it doesn’t exist, but I don’t think it’s the norm. Besides, Dorothea-sama is a higher rank than you. If you do something like that, she’ll get angry.”

Getting scolded is cute, but if they angered Dorothea, her parents, the Roseblade family, would not be able to keep quiet.

Jenna knows that, but she can’t accept it for many reasons.

“I just can’t accept it! How can she be happy to be here in this countryside? Does she like a slow life like Leon? I don’t understand why she comes all the way from the city.”

“It’s different for each person. More than that—Jenna-sama, you’d better get back to work or you’ll get really scolded.”

“I can’t keep losing like this! If it comes to this, let something go wrong—”

If the other person won’t fail, then make them — As she thought about that, Jenna was called.

“Jenna, come to Dad’s workroom”

“Why is this girl really?”

It was Barkas and Ruth who were there.

Barkas’s work room is the office.

The room is used for paperwork, but now there are three people in the room: Barkas, Ruth — and Jenna.

Jenna was shrunk in front of her parents.

It was Ruth who opened her mouth first.

"I heard from Yumeria-chan. Looks like you've been out of work for a while, taking that girl around."

"S-She betrayed me?"

"She's not Jenna's servant in the first place. Leon is the one who hired her. Yumeria-chan has told me everything about you since the first day you threw your work away."

Jenna breaks out in a cold sweat when she hears that everything was known from the beginning.

Barkas crossed his arms and let out a deep sigh.

"She kept telling you to go back to work, didn't she? I know you have a lot on your mind, and I've been keeping an eye on you. And yet, you just keep throwing your work away."

Ruth had a quietly angry look on her face, and Jenna felt that this was a bad situation.

So she desperately makes excuses.

"*A-Anone*, because she grow up as a young lady, maybe it will be tough, so I was just watching to see if anything went wrong!"

Jenna felt herself struggling to come up with a quick excuse, but of course it didn't go through.

Ruth straightforwardly states the correct argument.

"Then why don't you help her. What do you mean by sneaking around?"

"I-I'm embarrassed."

"You're not the kind of girl who gets embarrassed in the house. And I've heard everything from Yumeria-chan. You thought she was going to run off anyway, didn't you?"

“Because she grew up in the city? There is no way she’s doing well.”

“She’s doing better than you are.”

This time Barkas talks about the evaluation of the surroundings.

“Dorothea-san has a good reputation among the servants and knights of the house. When she visited the town a while ago, she was very popular.”

And Ruth talks about Jenna’s evaluation.

“You, on the other hand, have been receiving complaints from the servants working in the mansion.”

The servants who work at the mansion, actually not that many, but all of them have known each other for a long time.

All these acquaintances complained about Jenna, whom they had known since childhood.

This told Jenna’s reputation.

(Wait a minute. This is —— Isn’t mine worse?)

Now she finally understands.

Jenna feels utterly defeated by Dorothea, her sister-in-law who does better with her family than she does.

And here comes the story that will push Jenna further.

With a look of shame on Ruth’s face, Dorothea told her about a proposal that had been made.

“Jenna, there was actually a matchmaking offer for you.”

“I said I don’t like matchmaking —— “

“Listen to the end. Dorothea-chan told me that she would introduce you using the Roseblade family’s connections. It seems he’s a court nobleman living in the royal

capital.”

“Eh? That means —— “

(You’re kidding! What a good girl)

Jenna gave a heartfelt pat on the back, but that was not the end of the disappointing news.

Ruth tells the pleased Jenna.

” —— We refused it.”

“Eh?”

When Jenna doesn’t understand, Barkas looks apologetic.

Not to Jenna, but to Dorothea.

“It seems the house has a relationship with the Roseblade family. We can’t bring shame to Dorothea-san by introducing you to such a house.”

Ruth seems to have the same feelings and cares about Dorothea.

“It will be a nuisance to that girl.”

Jenna trembled and protested to them.

“Why! It was a great chance!”

When she heard that, Ruth said the reason they refused.

“I would have given it some thought if you had done your work. But when I entrusted you with a task, you threw it away and stalked Dorothea-chan —— You’re really no good.”

Jenna finally realized it too.

(Eh, maybe if I worked seriously, I could get married?)

Barkas tells Jenna.

"I've been meaning to tell you, but it's not going to happen unless you change. If you could just take these last few days seriously, we'd have some hope."

Ruth is in tears.

"It's really pathetic"

Jenna collapses, knowing that she has missed out on a great chance.

"Tell me fiiirst !!"

Meanwhile, around that time.

Elsewhere, Dorothea had called Yumeria.

"Here, your reward."

"Thank you!"

Yumeria receives a large amount of money for a reward, and hugs it tightly.

The sight of it made Dorothea curious as to what it was used for.

"What do you want the money to be used for?"

Yumeria replies without trying to hide it.

"Yes! I'm going to send money to my son, Kyle."

"Speaking of which, your son is in the royal capital, isn't he?"

"That's what I've heard. I get letters from time to time, so I'm thinking of sending something along."

Dorothea smiles at Yumeria, who tells her happily.

“I’m sure he’ll be pleased.”

“Ehehe, thank you very much.”

As Yumeria leaves, Nix appears as if to take her place.

He seemed to be curious about Yumeria, who had passed by and asked about her.

“Has something happened with Yumeria-san?”

“Didn’t I already tell you to stop speaking so politely?”

“I-I’m sorry. I’m not used to it.”

Nix apologizes, and Dorothea gives him a light warning, “Be careful next time.”

“If you don’t get used to it soon, you’ll be in trouble. The people around will underestimate Nix-sama.”

“Y-Yes. What’s more, what happened just now?”

Nix tries to change the subject, but Dorothea says honestly.

“I asked her to keep an eye on your troublesome sister.”

“About Jenna? Did she do something?”

Dorothea giggles at Nix’s concern.

“Don’t worry. I’m sure she’s reflecting on it by now.”

“Is that so? But if anything goes wrong, just let me know.”

“Of course. We are husband and wife.”

That night.

Jenna made up her mind in her room.

"If this continues, my life will be over. If this happens, I have to go to the royal capital no matter what and try to turn things around."

Jenna felt that — her family home had already been taken over by Dorothea.

Living in a mansion like that would be difficult for her, and if she was not careful, she might be forced to get married.

If I don't want that, I have to act on my own, she said.

Cornered, Jenna gets serious.

"Now I have to save up my allowance and make money for the trip. If this happens, I'll do whatever it takes, whether it's housework or not. I'll learn to do a few things, and increase my chances!"

The blood of the Bartofalt family, which gets serious when cornered, was certainly flowing in Jenna's veins.

"I will never give up!"

Jenna hadn't given up on city life yet.

EXTRA 2

IT WAS ALL A DREAM

The first night I came back to school.

A lot happened today —— No, I think it was too much.

“What the hell the capture target becoming a girl? It would be harder to predict.”

[I agree with you. But now it's clear who's better, me or Creare. Master, please tell me your current assessment.]

Luxion asks me to correct my assessment, as if he is still holding on to the fact that I once said that Cleare was more reliable.

I felt like I was losing if I answered truthfully, so I decided not to answer.

“More than that, I'm going to sleep, so give me some medicine.”

[—— Are you so reluctant to admit that I'm good at what I do? And how many times have I told you that I can't allow drugs?]

“I just want to sleep without thinking about anything today. The capture target became a girl, you know.”

It doesn't make any sense at all, but what I'm trying to say is that it was so unexpected that I couldn't process it.

Right now, I just want to sleep without thinking about anything else.

[There is no need for it]

“That's okay. I know where you keep the medicine.”

I see Luxion storing the medicine and finding the pills in that place.

The fact I saw that made Luxion's panic and that was quite unusual.

[That's no good]

"Why? Different medicine?"

[No, it's a sleep inducing drug. It's a new drug formulated by Creare, and it's already been tested, but it has side effects.]

"Side effects? Eh, that's a dangerous drug, isn't it."

[It is not life-threatening and there are few disadvantages to using it. It is safer than most of the drugs available in this country. It's just --]

"Then, no problem"

[-- Wha!]

Luxion was about to say something, but I didn't care and took the medicine.

It is a medicine made according to my constitution.

There would be few side effects, and if it were dangerous in the first place, Luxion would have thrown it away.

It's probably just a minor side effect that he has trouble judging.

[I don't care what happen. I've warned you.]

"Then you'll have to prepare a safer medicine next time. *Fua~*, I'm getting sleepy, so I'm going to bed."

I lay down on the bed and closed my eyes.

This drug makes me sleep faster.

I like it a little.

[Master, please wake up. It's time to get up.]

The next morning I had a very uncomfortable wake up.

"I don't feel like I slept so much"

Crawl out of bed with a drowsy head and yawn with a stretch.

"Are? What day is it today?"

When I ask Luxion about the plans for today, he answers with a dumbfounded look.

[Get a grip, please. Today is the entrance ceremony. Your cousin is also entering school, and if you show your disheveled appearance, she will dislike you.]

" —— Cousin?"

[Are you still half asleep? Master's father has a younger brother and his daughter is entering school this year. Your father should have told you to take care of her.]

"I don't remember that. Luxion, if you're going to make a joke, make it a funny one. I may have a cousin or something, but I don't remember being asked to do anything like that ——"

Before I could say I didn't remember, Luxion played back the audio recording.

It was a conversation between me and my dad.

"Leon, your cousin is entering school this year, so take care of her."

"Cousin? Are? Who is she again?"

"I don't think you know each other. My brother, your uncle, was sent away to the countryside after his service. But I've received a letter from him asking me to take care of his daughter as she's entering school."

"Hm~m"

"Are you listening to me properly? Ha~a —— If Nix were still there, I'd feel a lot more assured."

The conversation ended there, but it was definitely me and my dad's voice.

I can tell from the voice that I'm not listening to him seriously.

"Eh? Did I really have a cousin? No, I had a cousin, but a cousin I've never met is coming to school?"

Indeed, there are relatives, but I hadn't expected any other children to be admitted from our house besides Finley.

I don't remember any of this to begin with.

Even if I hadn't listened carefully, I doubt Dad would have reminded me.

He has a tendency to worry, so it shouldn't be surprising that he talked about my cousin before I left.

Did Dad forget about it too?

Did I have an uncle who was sent to the countryside in the first place?

As I was pondering, Luxion, who was in a good mood to point out my mistake, happily told me about the plans for today.

[We are scheduled to meet before the entrance ceremony. I'm looking forward to meeting her too.]

"Are you looking forward to it?"

[Yes. If she is related to Master, then I can assume that her genes are closer to the old humans.]

He's still the same guy who cares about the old and the new.

I don't think it's worth worrying about now, but I guess it's still important to these guys.

I didn't dare to ask any questions, because it would have been too annoying if I had mentioned the situation.

“Then we should meet face to face as soon as we have breakfast”

After getting ready and eating breakfast, I headed to the school building.

I could see the students in their brand new uniforms, looking quite happy.

“So this is what a new school year looks like.”

[I’m sure Master has been through this before,]

“Things are different now than when I first came here. It’s more refreshing to see a normal scene.”

None of the schoolgirls had a dedicated sub-human servant with them.

That’s all, but it feels very fresh.

Is this really that school? It feels like I’m dreaming.

I headed to the fountain plaza in the school with Luxion.

Many students seem to use the plaza around the fountain as a meeting place.

“There are many people. It’s going to be hard to find her”

When I was fed up with the number of people, Luxion went in front of me to show me the way.

[This way]

“You know it?”

[Yes. Look, there she is.]

Ahead of Luxion was a female student who for some reason had a spherical unit machine Luxion with a ribbon attached on, floating by her side.

She has long black hair, and at first glance, she seems like a normal girl.

However, with ribboned Luxion by her side, it makes her look different from the people around her.

“Why does she have a unit too? Maybe she’s the owner of the lost item?”

Surprised, I asked Luxion for confirmation and got a surprising answer.

[No, it’s an AI I created that specializes in support. Cute, right?]

“C-Cute? It’s just you with a ribbon attached.”

[The texture of the surface material is different. The size of the lens has also been changed, so it would be a mistake to assume that we are identical.]

If I look closely, they may be slightly different, but to those around me, they both look the same.

The ribbon are the only reason I can distinguish them, otherwise I would have made a mistake.

“I-I see.”

When Luxion approached her, perhaps noticing me, a dark-haired girl walked up to me.

The way she walked with her bag in both hands, she had the air of a girl of culture.

I got the impression that she was ladylike.

“Nice to meet you. *Etto* ——”

As I try to greet her, I realize that I don’t know her name.

“I am [Linette]. It’s an honor to meet you, Marquis.”

“I-I see. I am ——”

“I know. You’re Leon Fou Bartofalt, right? I know I have a lot to learn, but from now on, please take care of me.”

Linette bows, and when she raises her head, she smiles at me.

Looking closer, she looks adorable.

But for some reason, it stuck with me strangely.

Then a Luxion with a ribbon comes up to my nose.

[Hey, what are you looking at? If you mess with Linette, you will never get away with it.]

“The fake Luxion seems to be quite loyal. They may look the same on the outside, but I have a feeling they’re something else on the inside.”

I took a step back and created a distance, and when I spoke lightly, Luxion was colder than usual.

[She has the name [Lucria]]

“Eh, did you name her?”

[Is there a problem?]

“There isn’t, but”

As Luxion and I were talking, Linette and Lucria started talking as well.

[Hey, Linette! All men are wolves, so don’t let them fool you. Especially that guy is absolutely no good!]

“He’s a relative, so he won’t look at me like that, right?”

[Linette is cute, so you should be more vigilant.]

“No-No, I heard he has a fiancée, I’m sure it’s okay.”

Linette is having a conversation with Lucria.

Apparently, this is Linette’s true self.

Perhaps she noticed my gaze and tried her best to smooth things over.

“E-Excuse me. I got distracted by my conversation with Lucria.”

[Linette is so cute when she's trying to smooth things over!]

Lucria circled around Linette, calling her cute.

While Linette had a drawn-out smile on her face, but she was acting stern in front of me.

“You don't have to worry about it. I was the third son of a poor baron not long ago. I'm not very good with formalities.”

When I said that, Linette was visibly relieved.

“Really? Cause you said so. I got permission from the Marquis, right? Ha~a, I'm glad. I'm just feeling a little tired at the thought of all this stiff talk going on.”

The sudden change in attitude gave me the impression of an athletic, active girl.

I guess she was pushing herself too hard.

Linette is such a person, but she is very close to me mentally.

“So what should I call you, Marquis? As for me, I don't think it's appropriate to call you Marquis every time.”

She called herself using “*Boku*”.

When she is quiet, she looks like a ladylike girl, but when she talks, her personality comes out clearly.

“Senpai or Leon is okay, call me whatever you like.”

“I don't feel comfortable calling you that. The safest choice is Leon-senpai, or if you want to go for something else is *onii-chan* or something like that? You're my cousin, so do you mind if I call you that?”

For some reason, my heart skipped a beat when Linette, a *boku* girl, called me *onii-*

chan.

I wasn't aware of her as a member of the opposite sex, but she was very protective.

Linette goes on to give a few suggestions.

"Leon-senpai or Leon-*oniisan*? I feel like Leon-niichan is too familiar, which one is good?"

"Leon-*oniichan*"

When I answered immediately, Luxion and Lucria get closer and start whispering to each other.

[He chose without hesitation, Luxion-*oniichan*]

[Lucria, this is the kind of person Master is. He always says he doesn't like a little sister, but in fact he's happy about it. He is an unprincipled person.]

--Eh, what? That guy Luxion, he makes her call him *oniichan*?

That's more impossible.

"Are you in a position to say anything about the other people? You're letting her call you *oniichan*, too. If you made her, aren't you her father?"

Lucria argues with me in a harsh tone.

[What's wrong with me calling him whatever I want! In the first place, if Luxion-*oniichan* is the father, who is the mother? Who? Bring her to me!]

"Creare, maybe?"

[Ha~a? Why is she the mother? It doesn't make sense. Explain the reason within 400 characters. Explain it to me in a way that would convince me!]

She is so annoying.

Her attitude toward Linette was noticeably indulgent, but she was extremely harsh toward me.

Luxion calms Lucria.

[Lucria, leave it at that. It makes no sense for Master to have chosen Creare as your mother. There is no point in pursuing it.]

[As expected from Luxion-*oniichan*. You know all about this guy.]

[Not so much]

The AIs are making fun of me in a friendly way.

Just when I think I have more troublesome AI, Ange and Livia arrive at Fountain Square.

“There you are”

“Leon-san, who is that girl?”

They were apparently looking for me, and when they noticed Linette, they became a little suspicious.

It must have bothered them that I was with a girl.

Tell them what's going on before it gets messy.

“She's a relative of mine, her name is Linette. My dad told me to take care of her.”

Ange's gaze softened as I stated the facts.

“Is that so? I'm Angelica.”

Livia also greeted Linette.

“I'm Olivia. It's nice to meet you, Linette-san.”

Linette bowed, a little flustered.

From her attitude, it seems that she knows about my fiancé.

“Nice to meet you”

As I was about to cut the meeting short, Ange and Livia approached Linette.

Suddenly, Ange closed the distance and lifted Linette's chin with her fingers.

"You're related? You sure do look like Leon."

"*A-Ano?*"

Livia, who was behind her, pressed her large breasts against the back of a confused Linette.

"You're right. The atmosphere is somewhat similar."

They huddle, they stare, they push — Linette turns her gaze to me, asking for help.

"Leon-niisan"

In order to help my confused cousin, I warned them.

"That's enough, both of you. Linette is troubled."

When I say that, Ange turns her gaze to me.

There was something mysterious and charming about Ange's expression as she smiled.

"It's fine, right. I like her. She looks like Leon, which is really nice."

"—Eh?"

Ange grabbed Linette's face gently with both hands and brought her face close to hers.

Linette's cheeks blush in front of Ange, and she remains as she is.

And then Livia says something outrageous.

"Ange really likes girls."

I was stunned by her words. Before I could say anything, Ange said to Livia.

“I’ve had enough of men. You’re not interested in men either, are you?”

“Right”

Ange and Livia’s confession made me decide to confirm it.

“*Ano*, I’m also a man, though?”

The two of them give me a puzzled look.

Could it be that they’re tired of me?

When I think about it like that, Livia looks at me questioningly.

“Leon-san is Leon-san, right?”

“*U-Un*. That’s right.”

Sure, I’m Leon, but I’m also a man.

“Then, it’s fine.”

“What?! It isn’t fine at all? Because I’m also a man that means you hate me too, right?!”

It was Ange who drowned out my anxiety.

“No problem. I hate men, but I like you. I like Leon personally, regardless of your gender.”

My heart fluttered at the manly words, and Ange turned her gaze back to Linette.

“So if there’s a girl who looks like Leon, I’ll be interested.”

“Yes. Yes?”

For a moment, I was almost convinced, but I couldn’t get my head around it, and before I knew it, Marie was at my side. She was clutching my clothes and had a sulking face.

“Since when have you been there?”

Marie glared at Linette.

“Oniichan’s little sister is me only! Don’t get carried away!”

I hurriedly covered Marie’s mouth with my hand as she shouted in public that I was her big brother.

“*Ba-Baka!* Why did you say that here? I told you to keep your mouth shut because it would complicate things—*Are?*”

I looked fearfully at Ange and Livia, but they were not there.

Before I knew it, Marie had also disappeared, and the only ones left in the fountain square were me and Luxion — the others were Linette and Lucria.

“*A-Are?* Where are the two of them? And Marie’s not here either. Oi, Luxion.”

As I try to confirm the situation with Luxion, I suddenly hear the sound of an alarm.

“Master, please wake up. It’s time to get up. “

The next thing I knew, I was lying on my bed.

As I sit up, I can hear Luxion’s usual sarcasm.

[*Oya?* You woke up pretty straightforwardly today.]

Slowly, I looked at Luxion, and he didn’t look any different from usual.

Was everything that had just happened a dream?

It felt too real, so I confirmed with Luxion.

“Tell me the side effects of the medicine I took yesterday.”

[From the looks of it, you’ve experienced the side effects. It’s just as you imagine, Master. It is a side effect of the medicine, it’s you have a dream as if it were real.]

I let out a deep sigh at the ridiculous side effects.

“I’m relieved to hear that. No, I had a dream that I had a cousin I didn’t know about. Luxion had a little sister too.”

[I don’t have a little sister]

“Right! *Iya~,* I’m glad. In my dream, I was surprised when Ange and Livia said they weren’t interested in men.”

[In the future, please check the side effects before you take the medicine. That being said--]

Luxion tells me today’s schedule—.

[The little sisters of Julius and others are entering the school. They have requested a meeting with Master, so please have the meeting before the entrance ceremony.]

—The five of them have a little sister? I thought so for a moment, but then a question came to mind.

I didn’t hear a word from them that their sisters would be enrolling.

So is this a dream? Or is it real?

—Which one is it, really?

EXTRA 3

YUMERIA'S REMITTANCE

Spring break.

When Kyle returned to the academy in the royal capital with Marie, he received a letter and a package from his mother, Yumeria.

Kyle cut the seal of the letter in his room and burst into tears when he saw the contents.

" --Mom"

The words that spilled out were filled with happiness.

The letter was full of concern for Kyle's well-being.

Are you hurt or sick? Are you eating well? Are you sleeping well?

Although Yumeria is still very young, she shows a lot of concern for Kyle as a mother.

Kyle was moved to tears by his mother's love.

"I keep on making her worry."

And the contents of the packages that arrived with the letters were mostly sweets and food.

They are all simple sweets, not as glamorous as the ones sold in stores.

But it made Kyle very happy.

"I'll have to share it with Marie-sama and the others later. --*Are?*"

Kyle was happily checking the contents when he found an envelope.

Since he has already read the letter, he thinks about what the envelope is for and

guesses by feel when he picks it up.

He hurriedly checked the contents and found the money there.

It was not a small amount of money, and for Kyle, it was a lot of money.

“M-Mom, you don’t have to do this.”

Kyle is depressed because he feels that he has worried his mother, even though he should be the one who has to send money to her.

“What should I do with this money? It’s important money, so I might as well keep it, right? But that’s a little difficult, too.”

Thinking about how to spend the money that Yumeria has sent.

Kyle had figured out that the best use of the money would be for living expenses, since daily life was difficult.

However, since it was money sent by Yumeria, he wanted to use it carefully.

If he could, he would like to keep the money in his pocket, but it is difficult for him not to use the money because of his tight living conditions.

As he was pondering this and that, there was a knock at the door of Kyle’s room.

The other party seems to be Kara.

Unlike Kyle, Kara is not a subhuman servant, but a hardworking woman who has volunteered to take care of Marie.

To Kyle, she is more like a friend than a co-worker.

He opened the door with a casual reply.

“Ye~s”

Then there was Kara standing at the entrance, out of breath from running.

Kyle could tell by the way she was acting that she was in a rush.

“Kyle-kun, there’s trouble! Those five people. Those five people again.”

Before he could ask for details, Kyle had a general idea of what was going on.

“Did those people do something again?”

Speaking of those five people, it is a group of five former nobles, including Julius.

Now, they had become a god of trouble for Marie, but after studying in the Republic, they had become somewhat more sane.

But still, a little.

They are also five people who prove that people do not change quickly.

Kara tells Kyle what the five of them have done.

“Listen! His Highness Julius prepared a breeding house on his own, Brad built a freak show but it collapsed and destroyed the school building, and Greg remodeled his room to make a training gym on his own!”

“They are the worst. And they were asked to pay for the repairs? Are? What’s going on with Chris and Jilk?”

When he asked about the two people whose names had not been mentioned, Kara’s expression darkened.

“Chris remodeled the bathrooms in the dormitory without permission. It looks like he won’t have to pay for that one, but the problem is paying for the renovations. It’s a lot more expensive than the other three.”

“Chris is garbage, isn’t he? So what’s about the worst garbage?”

Both Kyle and Kara are now calling their name except Julius.

After all the trouble they had caused, any sense of respect had disappeared.

Even Julius is only given the honorific title of “Your Highness” because he is a little more decent than the others.

And the one who is treated the worst is Jilk.

He is the most trashy of the five, and is called trashy by two of them because of the damage he causes.

Kara had a blue streak on her forehead.

"He proudly built a kiln on the school grounds for making pottery. If he couldn't afford to buy it, he said he'd make it himself."

Kyle was also annoyed with Jilk, who didn't seem to be sorry.

"Why don't those people quiet down a bit? And how about Marie-sama?"

What worried him more than the five of them was his master, Marie.

Kara covers her face with her hands.

"She collapsed when she heard the story."

When Kyle and Carla went to Marie's room, she was lying on her bed.

She mumbled to herself with a distant look in her eyes.

"I'll get scolded. I'm definitely going to be scolded."

She had dark circles under her eyes and was scared of something.

Kyle approached Marie and called out to her.

"Are you all right, *goshujin-sama*?"

When Marie noticed Kyle and Kara, she turned only her gaze to them and became teary-eyed.

Then she started to talk, but gradually her emotions could not be suppressed.

"I didn't think they'd screw it up in such a short time. What's the hell upfront investment

to make money. Why can't they just be quiet a little bit. Do they know how hard I had to work to get a decent livelihood."

Currently, Marie and the others are under the patronage of Leon.

As for living expenses, they are paid by Leon, and the amount is not small.

And yet, thanks to the five idiots who had screwed things up during spring break, she was already short of money.

It was still not enough to pay for the repairs and other expenses, so she had to ask Leon for extra financing.

Marie cries.

"Creare's out of town and what am I supposed to do? I am going to get scolded again. Even though it's not my fault!"

Kyle and Kara also pity Marie when they see her struggling with the five idiots.

At the same time, the five idiots were upsetting them.

If Marie is having a hard time, then of course they are going to have a hard time too.

Just when they thought that they might be able to lead a stable life under Leon's patronage, it happened.

But now that it has been done, they have no choice.

Cursing the five idiots here will not improve the situation, so Kyle suggests what they can do now.

"Goshujin-sama, I have a little money."

"Eh?"

Kyle took out the money from Yumeria that he had been holding so carefully and offered it to Marie.

He felt sorry for Yumeria, but he also felt a strong desire to help Marie if she was

suffering.

(If it is to help someone, Mom will forgive me, right?)

With that in mind, he offers to spend this money.

“We should be able to live for a while with just this.”

When Marie received the envelope, she started to smile more and more — But she noticed something was wrong right away.

“Wait. Why does Kyle have this much money?”

As Marie questioned, Kara seemed to wonder as well.

“Maybe the money you earned from a job?”

They thought, could it be the money that Kyle earned? Kyle honestly told them where the money came from.

“No, it’s a remittance. Mom said she had some extra income and wanted me to spend it as I wanted. So I thought it would be better to use it for everyone’s good.”

When Kara heard it, she was moved to tears by Kyle’s kindness.

“Kyle-kun”

But Marie pushed the envelope back to Kyle.

“I can’t take it”

“Goshujin-sama?”

To Kyle’s confusion, Marie stood up on the bed and put her hands on her hips.

“After hearing that story, there is no way I’m going to take that! That money is for you to spend on yourself. Use it carefully. Absolutely!”

“B-But”

Despite being short of money and in a difficult situation, Marie did not accept Kyle's money.

Marie is very motivated.

"I'll do something about the money. So, Kyle, put that money away. H-Hurry up. While I'm still sane."

In fact, Marie would like to rely on Kyle's money, but she's determined not to.

Kyle stares at the envelope.

"I'll do that."

Kyle embraces the money sent by Yumeria.

Seeing that, Marie and Kara smiled and nodded.

"That's good. Your mother will surely be pleased."

"That's right. I think that might be better. But, Marie-sama? What shall we do about the money issue?"

When Kara asks her about her financial problems, Marie responds with a wry smile on her face.

"I-I'll do something about it."

Marie was holding her head when she was alone.

"How can I use his mother's remittance for living expenses? And the reasons are so ridiculous that even I'm hesitant!"

Both Kyle and Kara had left the room, and with no one else around, she could scream as she pleased.

She picked up a pillow and threw it against the wall, venting her annoyance.

"It stings! It stings with pinpoint accuracy to my regret! I was playing with my parents' money in a previous life, and it stings like hell and hurts my heart!"

Previous life. Marie got some money by pretending to her parents that it was for certification and traveled abroad with her friends.

The misfortune that followed after that and the loss of her parents' trust is still a trauma for Marie.

"I want money for living expenses, but if I touch the remittance for Kyle, I'll be finished as a person. If this happens, I'll get down on my knees to ask aniki for living expenses."

Marie was going to get down on her knees to her brother in her previous life to get money for her living expenses.

AFTERWORD

What did you think of “Otome Game World is a Tough World for Mobs” Volume 8?

This is the author, Mishima Yomu.

This time, I tried to put together a story that would serve as an intermezzo.

Now that the Republic Arc is over and a lot of the heavy stuff has been taken care of, I wanted to talk about something lighter.

That's why the main story was about Nix and Dorothea.

Actually, this character, Dorothea, has already appeared in the questionnaire benefits.

Since she did not appear in the web version, many readers may not know about it.

If you are interested, please fill out the questionnaire and enjoy the bonus SS Marie route.

And the next volume will start the story of the third otome game in earnest, and I think Leon and his friends will play an active role in it — maybe.

Then, thank you for your continued support of MobSeka!

SIDE STORY

MILENE

In commemoration of the release of “Otome Game World is a Tough World for Mobs, Volume 8” on June 30, we have prepared a bonus SS for “Shosetsuka ni Narou” as well.

I hope you enjoy it.

- *Please note that the timing of the story is based on the book (volume 8).*

Here’s information for the bonus in volume 8,

- *Toranoana*
- *Melon Books*
- *BOOK☆WALKER “e-book”*

Is where you can get it.

Could this be the first time I’ve made a bonus SS in an e-book?

And this time, too, I did my best for the survey bonus SS, Marie Route!

I’m sorry to say that I have to have my editor check my work every time, but I think it must have exceeded 40,000 words?

You can read the book by purchasing the book, accessing the URL or barcode on the back of the cover or at the end of the book, and answering a questionnaire.

It will be newly written, so I think readers who only read the web version will also enjoy it.

Well, then, thank you for your continued support!

Milene Rafa Holfalt.

It has been more than ten years since she was married to the Holfalt royal family from the United Kingdom of Leparto.

She has beautiful long, silky, platinum blonde hair and melancholy eyes.

Even though she was in her mid-thirties, her beauty dazzled young men.

The first of them is Leon, who has achieved an exceptional rise in his career.

From the third son of a baron, who could not inherit his house, he has now been promoted to a marquis.

He played an active role in the battle against the Principality of Fannouss, and the following year, he went on a rampage in the Republic of Arzel, where he studied.

Within the country, he is called a fiend knight, and from abroad, he is feared as "Holfalt's ultimate weapon".

Many people felt pity for the Republic of Arzel, which had accepted him as an international student.

Leon is unpredictable and difficult to deal with, and he shows no respect for the king.

And yet, he acted like a proper knight only to Milene, which led to rumors that he was the "*Queen's Young Swallow**". (*TLN: *Young lover of an older woman*)

She is treated as the queen who charmed even that fiend knight.

Milene let out a sigh when she saw the pile of papers on the desk in her office.

"Why am I doing this?"

Even documents that would normally be handled by Roland, her husband, were being sent to Milene.

Milene herself has long since given up and accepted the situation, but sometimes she feels irresistibly angry.

As she was checking the documents and writing her signature, one of the maids informed her that a guest was coming.

The other was his son, Julius.

When she gave her permission, her son, who was strangely cheerful, greeted her with a fresh smile.

"Mother, you look well. I have a favor to ask you today."

When her son came to her without greetings instead he made a request, Milene is disappointed in her heart.

The unnecessarily long greeting was a problem, but she also thought that as a prince, he should observe a little more manners in the royal castle.

If this was Julius when he was the Crown Prince, Milene would have pointed it out harshly.

But now Julius is nothing but a difficult prince to deal with.

Normally, he had have been stripped of his position as crown prince and would have been in a desperate position.

As long as her son seemed to be enjoying himself every day, Milene, as a mother, would respond with the thought, "This is fine".

"Julius looks fine every day."

"Yes! I have wonderful days."

His eyes sparkled and he looked really happy.

"So, what are your needs?"

She wanted to say something sarcastic, but as a mother, she was happy to see her son having such a good time.

However, when she heard Julius' request, she stopped writing her signature.

“I’m actually thinking of opening a store.”

” — Shop?”

“Yes. After all, if I want to become a chef, I want to train somewhere. However, I don’t think any restaurant will accept me because of my position. So! I’ve decided to set up my own restaurant and hone my skills with customers!”

Julius told Milene passionately, with a serious look on his face that he didn’t think he was wrong.

Milene was saddened by his enthusiasm, which he had not shown when he was a Crown Prince.

“I can’t believe a prince wants to be a chef”

Where in the world had Julius strayed from the path?

No matter how she looks at it, it was around the time he entered the school.

(He’s just been seduced by that girl Marie)

Milene knew that many men failed in their relationships with women, but when it was her son, she wanted to complain.

” — You should hold off on owning a store. If you really want to become a chef, take instruction from the head chef at the royal palace.”

“Eh? No, what I want to make is skewers, so I think the chef has a different specialty?”

“S-Skewers!?”

“Yes. Skewers are the dish I want. I’m going to become a first-rate skewer shop!”

She hoped he was joking, but Julius’s expression was serious.

Milene was beginning to feel like crying.

She felt a headache and held her forehead with her hand and decided to consult her husband even though she knew she could not rely on him.

“I'll consult with His Majesty”

Then Julius, for some reason, took a favorable view of what she just said and told Milene where Roland was.

“If that's the case, let's find Father at once. He's probably out in the castle right now, and I want to hurry this up if possible. I'll help you look for him.”

” — Wait. I have a lot to say about that, but really, don't move. For that matter, why isn't His Majesty in the castle? I thought he had plans for today.”

“You didn't know? That's a dummy schedule. He's trying to hit on women at this time of the day for the reason that he is learning about the lives of the people in the castle.”

At Julius's words, Milene clutched the document.

“That good-for-nothing! Forcing me to do all the work while you play around in the daytime?”

“Hyii!?”

Julius backed away and broke out in a cold sweat at the sight of the furious Milene.

Milene rang the doorbell and called the maid who was waiting outside, “Bring back His Majesty,” she ordered in a cold voice.

The story of Julius opening a skewer shop ends in a stalemate.



Evening.

Sitting on a bench near the fountain in the courtyard, Milene watched the sunset.

“My husband is good-for-nothing and my son wants to leave his position as crown prince to become a skewer cook. — What was I doing wrong?”

With the guards and maids away, Milene looked a little tired.

Just then, a maid arrives with her package.

“Queen, I have a letter and a package for you from Marquis Bartfalt.”

“From Leon-kun? Is there something urgent?”

When she received the letter and parcel and checked the contents, Milene felt like crying.

The letter from Leon began with the words, “To Dear Queen”.

It was not an urgent matter, but it summarized the recent situation.

And there were many words of concern for Milene’s health.

When she opened the parcel, she found a souvenir inside.

The letter says, “I found a perfect souvenir for Milene-sama during my trip, so I’m giving it to you.”

“Good grief, he’s really —— ”

Milene’s face lights up.

The knights and maids of the guards who were watching were whispering to each other.

“It must be a love letter. Is the fiend knight fearless?”

“The Queen is pleased.”

“Because the Queen’s having a hard time”

Milene was so happy to see the souvenir that she didn’t hear anyone talking around her.







PtF by: traitorATZEN